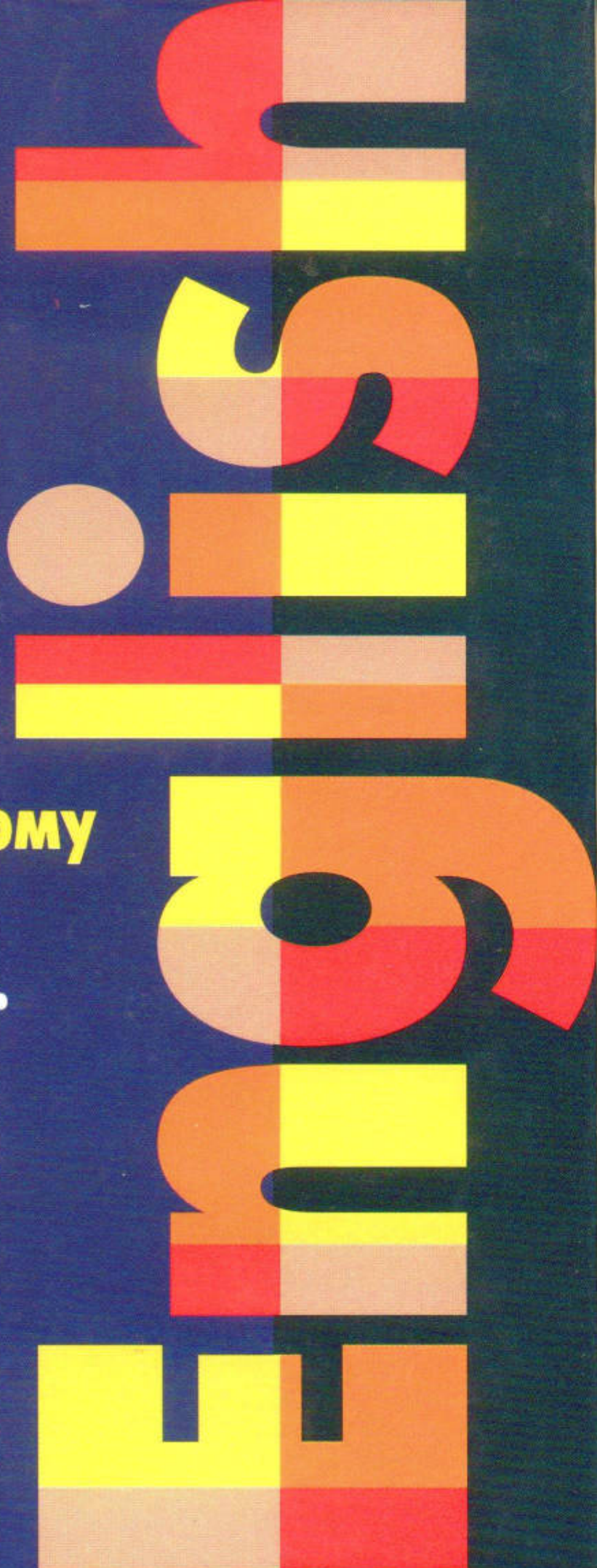


М. Я. Блох, А. Я. Лебедева,
В. С. Денисова

**Практикум
по английскому
языку:
Грамматика.
Сборник
упражнений**



Учебное пособие
для вузов



М.Я. Блох, А.Я. Лебедева,
В.С. Денисова

**Практикум
по английскому языку:
Грамматика.
Сборник упражнений**

Учебное пособие
для вузов

Москва

Астрель • АСТ
2005

УДК 811.111(075.8)

ББК 81.2 Англ-923

Б70

Р е ц е н з е н т ы:

кафедра английского языка Тульского государственного
педагогического института;

канд. филол. наук Н.М. Пригоровская
(Московский педагогический университет)

Компьютерный дизайн обложки Д.А. Зябрева

Подписано в печать с готовых диапозитивов 25.11.04.
Формат 84×108¹/₃₂. Бумага газетная. Печать высокая с ФПФ.
Усл. печ. л. 12,6. Тираж 7000 экз. Заказ 3160.
Общероссийский классификатор продукции
ОК-005-93, том 2; 953005 — литература учебная
Санитарно-эпидемиологическое заключение
№ 77.99.02.953.Д.000577.02.04 от 03.02.2004 г.

Блох, М.Я.

Б70 Практикум по английскому языку: грамматика.
Сборник упражнений: учеб. пособие для вузов /
М.Я. Блох, А.Я. Лебедева, В.С. Денисова. — М.:
Астрель: АСТ, 2005. — 238, [2] с.

ISBN 5-17-000092-8 (ООО «Издательство АСТ»)

ISBN 5-271-00756-1 (ООО «Издательство Астрель»)

Данное пособие представляет собой систематизированный
сборник упражнений по грамматике английского языка. Посо-
бие состоит из двух основных частей: морфологии и синтаксиса.

Основное внимание в пособии уделяется грамматическим
формам и конструкциям живой разговорной речи.

УДК 811.111(075.8)

ББК 81.2 Англ-923

ISBN 5-17-000092-8

(ООО «Издательство АСТ»)

ISBN 5-271-00756-1

(ООО «Издательство Астрель»)

© Блох М.Я., Лебедева А.Я.,
Денисова В.С., 2000

© ООО «Издательство Астрель», 2000

Предисловие

Настоящее пособие представляет собой практикум по систематическому курсу грамматики английского языка для студентов педагогических вузов, изучающих английский язык в качестве основной специальности, а также институтов и факультетов иностранных языков. Пособие написано в соответствии с Программой по практической грамматике английского языка для педагогических институтов Министерства образования РФ и включает упражнения по всем ее основным разделам.

Пособие состоит из двух частей: морфологии и синтаксиса. Очередность изучения тем определяется кафедрами таким образом, чтобы учебный материал по практической грамматике непосредственно соответствовал учебному материалу по практике речи.

Содержание и характер учебных работ пособия определяются его основным назначением — содействовать подготовке специалистов в области английского языка, свободно владеющего грамматически правильной английской речью. Этим определяется функциональная направленность упражнений независимо от того, затрагиваются ли в них строевые аспекты слова (категориальные формы, грамматически существенные подклассовые деления) или строевые аспекты предложения (членная структура, коммуникативная семантика). Таким образом, морфологические характеристики слов рассматриваются не изолированно, а в связи с теми коммуникативно-синтаксическими функциями, которые они выполняют в составе высказывания.

Каждая тематическая серия упражнений расширяет представление об изучаемых явлениях. Работа над упражнениями состоит из четырех этапов: ознакомительно-распознавательного, аналитического, активизирующего и повторительного. При этом в зависимости от конкретных тем ознакомительно-распознавательный этап может сочетаться с аналитическим, а повторительный одновременно служить и контролирующим.

Основной единицей учебного материала при работе над грамматикой служит предложение. В реальной речи предложение является составной частью целого текста, органически связанной с контекстом. Поскольку же для отработки грамматических форм и конструкций в огромном числе случаев требуется рассматривать отдельные изолированные предложения, при составлении упражнений авторы руководствовались дидактическим принципом имплицативного контекста. Данный принцип, обеспечивая концентрацию внимания учащихся на изучаемых явлениях грамматики, дает возможность преподавателю оперировать разными контекстами, которые можно строить и перестраивать в самом ходе учебного процесса.

Учитывая практическое назначение пособия, авторы старались формулировать задания и пояснения к упражнениям, по возможности избегая имеющихся разночтений в трактовке ряда важных элементов грамматики (ср. различия в теоретической интерпретации артиклей, падежей, наклонений, типов предложений и пр.).

Пособие может быть использовано как для работы в аудитории, так и для самостоятельной работы в домашних условиях. Оно отражает строй современной английской разговорной речи и может быть рекомендовано самому широкому кругу лиц, изучающих английский язык.

MORPHOLOGY

NOUN

Classification of Nouns

Exercise 1. Define the class the nouns in the following sentences belong to.

1. In the column there were carts loaded with household goods. 2. "Why is it assumed that people forget all moments but the last?" said Daniel. 3. I'd never recommend a gentleman to dye his hair. It seems unnatural somehow. 4. Raymond Parker was a foreman at the motor works, and was on the management committee. 5. My money was wet but all right. I counted it. 6. A man had come up to their camp and threatened to haul them in for shooting too many deer. 7. They hoped for one of the new houses on a building site on the outskirts of the town. 8. The information that the superintendent gathered was entirely favourable. 9. The B-17 flies with a five-man against our nine. 10. The police have made up their minds, or practically so. 11. Here were all species of female and one species of male hat. 12. Certainly, the hotel was facing a financial crisis. 13. The tongs made a pleasant clicking sound. 14. Once upon a time nothing but herds of oxen went through here on their way from Normandy. 15. Soames felt that if he had not known the contents of Timothy's will, he might have stayed away himself through delicacy. 16. Is this house your headquarters? 17. Esther swallowed porridge in silence, feeling quite cold and choked with misery, all because Miss Usher had told her on the way down to breakfast that she would be singing Nicola's solos.

18. The wines and liqueurs and champagnes of New Orleans were new and exhilarating to her. 19. I thought that amongst those surroundings with their recollections of his boyhood Dirk Stroeve would forget his unhappiness.

Exercise 2. State whether nouns in bold type are proper or common.

1. You can't buy a Cadillac for the same price as a Ford. 2. The next day I came across Cramer still trying to locate the trouble with the Mercedes. 3. The old Ford groaned as **Tom** shifted in into the second gear. 4. Do the police have any idea yet they're looking for a Jaguar? 5. I have a fear of handling guns, and so it was an effort for me to examine the Browning. 6. To the right and left guns spoke, here a short gun, a Colt or a **Smith and Wesson**. 7. In Paris, the baron finished reading the first column in the European edition of the "**New York Times**" and pushed it across the breakfast table to Caroline. 8. He thrust the newspaper aside and snatched up the "**Sunday Mail**". 9. You have a drawer for yourself where you put your own stuff, such as sandwiches, the "**Manchester Guardian**", the "**Daily Mirror**". 10. He stood on the corner of First Avenue looking for a taxi. 11. Who knows, you might become the next Pavlova. — What's that? — She was a great dancer. 12. Perhaps it would have been possible to see in him a new Prometheus. 13. There, that's the best picture in the Louvre. It's exactly like a **Manet**. 14. You stop at a **Marks and Spencer** and buy me a dry outfit. 15. The public-houses were friendly and informal. The names they bore were usual and familiar: *The Jolly Sailor, The Merry Ploughman, The Crown and Anchor, The Red Lion*.

Exercise 3. State whether the nouns in bold type are countable or uncountable.

1. Mrs Elsing was a thin, frail woman, who had been a beauty. 2. What I have said, he began again, refers to beauty in the wider sense of the word. 3. Clutton gave a long discourse on the subject that beauty is put into things by painters and poets. They create beauty. 4. She was not a beauty, in the sense that several women in this room were beauties; she had none of the remoteness that beauty needs. 5. Herbert looked at the youths, remembered their fathers. 6. Youth,

unfortunately, cures itself. 7. Give those articles to Mr Tom like a most noble youth. 8. You're a pretty little thing and young. Youth is so beautiful. 9. The coals fell suddenly, leaving a bright hollow in which the sparks stood still as fireflies. He leaned across to throw on coal. 10. His eyes glowed redly like twin coals. 11. She sat on a stone. A lizard slid swiftly between her feet and disappeared among the grasses. 12. Julia looked at the pretty, clever face, with the powdered hair, and wondered whether the stones that framed the little picture were diamonds or only paste. 13. He looked as if he had turned to stone. 14. When those three came in she was sitting before a red lacquer tea-table, finishing a very good tea. She always had tea brought in rather early, so that she could have a good quiet preliminary "tuck in" all by herself, because she was not quite twenty-one and this was her hour for remembering her youth. 15. The sandwiches came and I ate three and drank a couple more martinis.

Number

Exercise 1. State the number of the nouns in hold type. Define the class they belong to.

1. Sam amused himself by fitting branches into the fire as closely as possible. 2. He wore the remains of shorts and his feet were bare like Jack's. 3. Demerest reached out to switch radios. 4. He seemed to have more grey hairs at his temples. 5. At Capracotta, he had told me, there were trout in the stream below the town. 6. The gray waters of the Atlantic stared back at me. 7. A netting wire fence ran all around to keep our rabbits and deer. 8. I really cannot help your beliefs or your disbeliefs. 9. "The children are on the stairs," said Daniel. 10. You did not witness any of these phenomena yourself, did you? 11. Balthus had reached the outskirts of the native market and was moving among the first of the stalls, as if looking for someone. 12. The sheep were silent; the only sound in the darkness was the bubbling of the stream. 13. Three mouthfuls of soup convinced him that he could not eat. 14. Philip gazed with delight upon the passers-by. 15. In the silence that followed there came a clatter of hoofs.

16. You are not one of those people who see nothing and hear nothing. 17. Perhaps, there aren't any grown-ups there. 18. Well, if you've broken your glasses, you must write home for a new pair. 19. He would like to have a pair of scissors and cut his hair. 20. I'm quite willing to answer any questions the police want to ask me. 21. The wages were paid once a month by the secretary.

Exercise 2. State the number of the nouns in bold type and give the corresponding singular or plural, if any.

1. The doctor told him not to read without glasses. 2. Women who write anonymous letters to themselves are such a common phenomenon that the police are sure to jump to that solution. 3. You're not to leave the state unless we give you permission. 4. Once she got an offer, but the wages were only fourteen shillings a week. 5. It gave him a thrill to realize that Julia had genius. 6. The Japanese are a wonderful people, fond of dancing and light wines. 7. There was no piano, partly because pianos were too uncompromisingly accidental, and partly because it would have taken up much room. 8. His clothes were work of art — of exquisite cut. 9. Gavin walked out of the room and towards the stairs. 10. There was scarcely a white hair on her head and her eyes, as black and shining as buttons, sparkled with fun. 11. From the pig-run came the quick hard patter of hoofs, a castanet sound. 12. One of the stewardesses, her lips moving silently, was making a count of heads. 13. Do you ski? — Used to. But I haven't any skis now! 14. It gave the impression of shameful slum conditions, in spite of the television antennae at practically every roof. 15. She evidently remembered Joseph and his brethren. 16. Avice was one of those actresses who were quite sure of themselves from the first rehearsal. 17. Are you going to pay me damages? — Alas, where have you been damaged? 18. Love can never make us forget that we are brothers-in-arms, can it?

Exercise 3. Change the number of the nouns in bold type making all the necessary changes.

1. Afterwards he took a photo of me with wet hair to finish out the film. 2. He talked to another Divisional chief.

3. His shirt cuff showed up spotlessly, just half an inch beneath the sleeve. 4. He was as lively as a trout in a mountain stream. 5. Matthew Swain was one of a rapidly disappearing species, the small-town general practitioner. 6. It was like lying in the dark with a mosquito hovering above his face. 7. The cab branched off, along the side of a wood, and he heard a late cuckoo calling. 8. Among the retainers of a well-appointed house there were persons from every stratum of society. 9. "A pony is always small," said Regan. 10. It is only a hypothesis, but it's possible. 11. Everybody had a handkerchief concealed in his cuff. 12. I wish a flying fish would come on board tonight. 13. The waitress spent the morning working in the dining-room. 14. Britain's oil refining industry faces a serious crisis. 15. Mary was sitting in a straightbacked antique chair and the youth sat at her feet. 16. Suddenly she realized that there was not a passer-by in the street. 17. Now all the passengers were gone in a bus, along with the stewardess and the second officer.

Exercise 4. Explain the formation of the plural of the nouns in bold type.

1. He was just six feet tall and he had a gallant bearing. 2. I moved the stick forward and came down slowly to fifteen hundred feet. 3. He wasn't above five foot five, I should think. 4. They arrived daily from various termini. 5. Eric watched the wood-lice that were unable to avoid the flames. 6. Some call it a grape-vine, but it has always seemed like a pair of giant antennae to me. 7. He used his white linen pocket handkerchief and held it against his lips. 8. Nevada felt the horse's heart suddenly pound between his legs as his hoofs didn't meet the expected ground. 9. He had neglected his work so much that now he had only a fortnight to learn what the curriculum allowed three months for. 10. The outlines of the cypresses that lined the driveway were sharp and clear. 11. The wind howled across the deserted runway. If wolves appeared tonight, Mel thought, it would not be surprising. 12. The handcuff was clicked on to Greg's right wrist, and the other on the cop's left wrist. 13. It became almost a phenomenon in this back street, where carts stuck like winter flies, and people went by with books under their arms, as if

educated. 14. There were some daffodils, narcissi and hyacinths in the garden. 15. The larks sprang up in front of his feet, the air was full of butterflies, a sweet fragrance rose from the wild grasses. 16. There were nine of them at sea but four were carrying cargoes destined for his own personal warehouses in Brooklyn. 17. Public sanatoria are short of beds. I get two beds a week for females.

Exercise 5. Comment on the nouns *fish* and *fruit*.

I. 1. I dropped my clothes and waded into the stream. A thin silver fish streaked past me and I dove after it, hands outstretched. 2. The old man had seen many great fish. 3. The smell of those little fishes will follow me wherever I go. 4. This was a fish (shark) built to feed on all the fishes in the sea. 5. Remember how you went eighty-seven days without fish and then we caught big ones every day for three weeks. 6. There was water, an underground river, with blind fish in it. The fish were white and not very big. 7. Ah, well, there's plenty more fish in the sea. 8. From the bank, awhile, in the warm summer stillness, she watched the water-lily plants and willow leaves, the fishes rising. 9. The boy went in another boat and caught three good fish the first week.

II. 1. I saw a number of mango trees still bearing fruit. 2. He came to the smashed acres of fruit and ate greedily. 3. In the centre of each table was a great bowl of autumn fruit, around which were grouped bowls of figs and melons. 4. Great parcels of groceries and delicacies and dried fruits arrived from the city. 5. Why should I let the Yankees have the fruits of my labour? 6. Lifting the telephone, he asked for the hotel florist. "This is Mr O'Keefe. I believe you delivered some fruit to my suite." 7. From this central point they could see fruit-trees laden with magnificent fruits. 8. Like all the other woodwork of Versailles this was appliquéd with garlands, fruits and vine leaves. 9. They remain for three or four weeks working on the pomegranate orchard up at the Headlands and gathering fruit. 10. Clients will find a wide assortment of all sorts of delicatessen, including various tinned fruits and vegetables, cheeses and sausages.

Case

Exercise 1. Comment on the use of the Genitive Case.

a) 1. Greg drove past Forester's house again. 2. He kept his eyes fixed on his father's face, putting a question now and again. 3. Scarlett was Miss Ellen's child. 4. Michael's left-hand neighbour began breathing heavily. 5. I think we ought to drink dear James' health, and — and the health of Soames' wife. 6. I am no good at other people's affairs. 7. I've got a dentist's appointment in Langley at five-thirty.

b) 1. Robin, it's my mother-in-law's seventieth birthday. 2. That was Louise Leidner's doing. 3. There was a straight chair near the enclosure of the library secretary's desk. 4. They had found refreshment over the way at Brown and Smith's. 5. Mr Brown had been satisfied with the results of Tom's and Nick's visit.

c) 1. His eyes were fixed on Marjorie Ferrar's, whose eyes in turn were fixed on his. 2. He took the morning train and arrived at his mother's at lunchtime. 3. There's a lovely powder blue at Harton's. 4. Finding himself without cigarettes he dashed into a tobacconist's in Oxford Street. 5. When Jennie had given her daughter hot milk — a favourite remedy of her mother's — Vesta went to her room and lay down. 6. But frankly, Leidner, this business of your wife's seems to me rather out of my class.

d) 1. His house in Prince's Gardens was brilliantly alight. 2. Michael had gone to the Labour candidate's meeting party because he wanted to. 3. John nodded understandingly and after a moment's pause Tom went on. 4. Before I knew it, they'd passed me and were at the water's edge. 5. In this very heart of England's gentility one doesn't know what to do. 6. A sparrow-hawk hovered in the sun's eye. 7. The clock's hands crept on to seven before she heard voices in the hall. 8. He swallowed and I saw his Adam's apple go up and down. 9. I knew that one more display like yesterday's would demoralize the whole crew. 10. A hundred houses were evacuated for safety's sake.

Exercise 2. Replace the *of*-phrase by the noun in the Possessive Case.

1. The plays of Shakespeare are very popular in this country. 2. The house of my daughter-in-law is within a stone's

throw from here. 3. Jon slipped his hand through the arm of his mother. 4. Michael saw the neck of his neighbour grow redder. 5. When she caught the eye of Strickland she smiled. 6. From the dining-room Soames passed into the study of Timothy. 7. The cheeks of the secretary continued to brighten. 8. A chill smile played round the lips of Soames. 9. He told me of the return of his brother Roger. 10. The supper of the children is ready. 11. In the distance we saw the hut of a native. 12. Will you join the excursion of today? 13. The rays of the sun do not penetrate through that foliage. 14. The voice of a girl was heard in the distance. 15. The toys of the children are in the box.

Exercise 3. Use the Absolute Genitive Case.

a) 1. His eyes avoided the eyes of Andrew. 2. It was her job; not the job of old lady Winnie. 3. Gideon put out his left hand, and took the hand of Kate. 4. She had an unexpectedly pleasant voice, a little deeper than the voice of a clown.

b) 1. I'm not going to the house of Caroline Kent at all. 2. The middle wall had precisely the same books as used to be in the library at the house of his own Father in Park Lane. 3. After breakfast he went off to the house of Fleur. 4. You must come to the house of my father. 5. "They tell me at the house of Timothy," said Nicholas lowering his voice, "that Dartie has gone off at last."

c) 1. Peter was the son of one of Aunt Lottie's friends. 2. One of Holly's special little friends had come in — a fair child with short hair like the hair of a boy. 3. You are quite sure he wasn't one of the doctor's patients. 4. I am thinking of one of my father's cousins, who was a well-known physician and lived in Harley Street.

Exercise 4. Translate into Russian:

a baker's, a butcher's, a florist's, a pastry-cook's, a confectioner's, a chemist's, a tobacconist's.

Exercise 5. Translate into English. Pay attention to the use of the Possessive Case.

a) 1. Лицо Джона смягчилось, затем опять стало напряженным. 2. Он продолжал рассматривать лицо сестры. 3. Я не знаю, почему я вдруг подумал о сыне Стрик-

ленда. 4. «Вставай, старина», — сказал мальчик и положил руку на колено старика. 5. Глаза доктора встретились с его глазами.

б) 1. Отец Элизы и Тома — известный ученый. 2. Книжки Ильфа и Петрова очень популярны в нашей стране. 3. Чья ручка вам больше нравится: Джона или Елены? 4. Я очень люблю пьесы Шекспира и Шоу. 5. Я хочу портфель, как у Пети или Бори. 6. Это случилось несколько недель спустя после возвращения матери и сестры.

с) 1. Его лицо было маленькое, как у ребенка. 2. В двух окнах горел свет. Одно из них было окно Флер. 3. Все руки были подняты, кроме руки Майкла. 4. Маленький Том улыбался. Его улыбка была похожа на улыбку отца. 5. Джеймс посмотрел на лицо матери, а затем на лицо Ирэн.

д) 1. По пути домой она обычно покупала кусочек медового пирога в булочной. 2. Давай зайдем в кондитерскую. 3. Они ушли в аптеку и еще не возвратились. 4. Мы найдем его у Бартона. 5. Скажи Флер, что я иду к ее тете. 6. Он все еще у твоей матери. 7. Я оставляю вас здесь. Я иду к дочери. 8. Я собираюсь обедать у Флер.

е) 1. Он один из ближайших друзей моего отца. 2. Она одна из двоюродных сестер дяди Тома. 3. Это одна из любимых книг моей мамы. 4. «Пигмалион» — одна из наиболее популярных пьес Б. Шоу. 5. Я все-таки купил эту картину молодого Грина! 6. Эта угроза Герхардта казалась ужасной для Дженни и ее матери. 7. Какая она очаровательная, эта подруга Анны! 8. Не люблю я эту новую приятельницу Мэри!

Exercise 6. Correct or justify.

1. Jenny's car was there, and so was Robert's. 2. But what shall I do about this marriage of Val, Soames? 3. I saw him just now at your aunt. 4. His landlady was doing the week washing. 5. And so your wife is the great friend of that Mr Bosinney's? 6. Jon handed the cigarettes. He lighted his father and Fleur's, then one for himself. 7. I am Mr Wilkes sister. 8. Honour met his mother eyes. Nevil stood with his arm on Regan knee, and his eyes on his brother with a watchful expression. 9. Gavin turned his eyes on his brother.

10. What kind of girl was this wife of Jon's? 11. Ann has gone to the butchers'. 12. He looked attentively at the speaker shrewd, dry, doubting face. 13. We kept him at arms length. 14. A visit to Timothy was like an hour spent in the lap of a mother. 15. In a small pastry-cook they were served with tea and cakes. 16. She might know Kate first name. Kate is the friend of Greg's.

Exercise 7. Translate into English.

1. У меня нет своего фотоаппарата. Это фотоаппарат моего дедушки. 2. Я провела зимние каникулы у тети. 3. После получасовой ходьбы мы были уже у реки. 4. Как я люблю этот портрет отца! 5. Их маленький домик стоял у самой воды. 6. Вчера у меня не было времени пойти в парикмахерскую. 7. Филипп был одним из старых школьных друзей Джона. 8. Кого вы встретили у моих родителей? 9. После непродолжительной паузы она добавила: «Ты чудесный ребенок». 10. Ее губы более подвижны, чем у других людей. 11. На лестничной площадке было четыре двери. Я не знала, которая из них была дверь моих друзей. 12. Если Аннет не уважала его чувства, она могла подумать о чувствах Флер. 13. Она живет неподалеку от института. 14. Сегодня мы собираемся к дедушке и бабушке. 15. Я встретил их, когда они возвращались от Тома и Джейн. 16. Вам лучше пойти к Джеймсу и поговорить о завтрашнем собрании. 17. Это не мои друзья. Они друзья отца и матери. 18. Наступило минутное молчание, затем мальчик опять начал задавать вопросы. 19. Он был хирургом в совхозе «Красный луч» — полтора дня езды от города. 20. Вы читали сегодняшнюю газету? 21. Вы можете делать это в свое удовольствие. 22. Я сейчас не дома. Я у Елены Лосо. 23. Я не могу забыть этого замечания Роя. 24. До ближайшей деревни около часа езды на машине. 25. Каково ваше мнение о сегодняшнем путешествии? 26. Между прочим, ему советовали купить эту картину Джо! 27. Я лучше поеду назад к родителям. 28. Я отлично помню эту прекрасную улыбку Ника! 29. У нас была пятиминутная беседа с преподавателем английского языка в деканате. 30. Наша дача находилась на расстоянии двух километров от реки. 31. Ума не приложу, как мне

добраться до города в полночь. 32. Несколько дней тому назад я встретила старого друга моего брата на Урале. 33. Вчера я отдала свои часы часовщику.

Article

Exercise 1. Use the proper article. Point out the nouns which denote an object (or a person) already mentioned.

1. She smiled. ... smile was perhaps ... result of ... long practice; she hardly moved her mouth. 2. My clothes were my Sunday best: ... light grey suit, ... plain grey tie, ... plain grey socks and ... brown shoes. ... shoes were the most expensive I'd ever possessed. 3. It was so nice of you to buy these books for me. I gathered up ... heavy volumes and looked round for somewhere to put them. 4. It was Ashley's birthday and Melanie gave him ... surprise reception that night. Everyone knew about ... reception, except Ashley. 5. Mr Polteed unlocked ... drawer, produced ... memorandum, ran his eyes over it, and locked ... drawer up again. 6. "Bring ... bottle of Scotch and ... ice bucket for Mr Hopkins," Helen said. After ... maid had brought ... bottle of Scotch and ... ice bucket, Hopkins filled his glass and took ... long drink.

Exercise 2. Use the proper article. Point out the nouns which have a limiting attribute.

1. Her brother belonged to ... same club we did. 2. That's ... rarest occurrence I ever saw in my life. 3. ... attempt to persuade them left him exhausted. 4. In ... corner of ... room was ... wash-basin with ... hot and cold water. 5. ... thought of Medhurst went out of his mind swiftly. 6. He laid his hand upon ... chair, which stood in ... middle of ... room. 7. He took ... cigarette that I had carefully rolled up for myself and went. 8. He was ... most extraordinary lad I ever came across. 9. ... news he had conveyed would have horrified ... most women. 10. She looked with ... eager hungry eyes at ... bread, ... meat and ... beer that ... landlady brought. 11. I picked up ... morning paper which had fallen from my hand and resumed my perusal of ... morning news. 12. I had ... privilege of meeting your mother and dad there. 13. "I like you," he said. It was ... very

strange remark and ... old pipe I was smoking fell on ... floor. 14. At half past nine ... last patient left ... surgery. 15. It was ... most successful party I had ever attended. 16. ... thrill of that moment was unbelievable. 17. Anyway it was ... Saturday of ... football game with Saxon Hall. 18. I asked ... question I feared to ask. 19. I took ... bottle I wanted and went off with it.

Exercise 3. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the use of the definite article when the context or the whole situation makes it clear which object (or person) is meant.

1. ... trees swayed to and fro under ... grey sky. 2. ... air tasted fresh and clean with that special smell, like good bread-and-butter, which means that ... open country is near at hand. 3. "This is St Clair Road," she said as ... taxi turned up ... long steep hill. 4. Could you tell me where you've put ... money? 5. "Now, Laura," said her mother quickly, "come with me into ... smoking-room." 6. "How did you like ... film?" she asked. 7. She hurried in again and found ... water almost boiled away. 8. How is ... weather? I suppose it's as hot as in the Gobi. 9. ... small station was dimly lit by two square lamps. 10. Chance entered ... cabin. Arlie was sitting on ... bed, her eyes wide with ... fright. 11. He slammed down ... phone without waiting for ... answer.

Exercise 4. Explain the use of the definite article.

1. As I started up the stairs the concierge knocked on the glass of the door of her lodge. 2. I went in search of Poirot, and found him talking to the lean-faced young man who had been the late Mr Bleibner's secretary. 3. It is the universal opinion that the turning point of the Conference will be the strong personality of the Prime Minister. 4. It was one of those still November days, when the air is haunted with the light of summer, and something in the lines of the landscape recalled to her the September afternoon, when she climbed the slopes of Bellemont with Selden. 5. The station was at the centre of the eastern quarter of Warley. 6. Will you pack my things for me? I want the little suitcase as I'll be away only one night. 7. He was enjoying the conversa-

tion about tennis and all. 8. As we stood on the steps, we felt the smell of fallen leaves coming from the garden. 9. I pulled the peak of my hunting hat around to the front for a change. 10. The approach to the gateway was deep and muddy. 11. Now the only thing to do is to admit the error. 12. Every portrait that is painted with feeling is a portrait of the artist, not the sitter. 13. The gulf that lay between us was wider now than it had ever been. 14. A moment later she pulled back the bolt of the bedroom door and then turned the key and opened the door and stood on the landing outside. 15. I hit the button on the clock so hard that I knocked the thing off the bedside table. 16. She was as pleased as he at the unexpected news, but for a rather different reason.

Exercise 5. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the use of the article with the noun predicative.

1. Benton was ... pretty little village with ... definite character of its own. 2. How long have you been ... secretary? 3. It was ... lovely landscape. It was idyllic, poetical and it inspired me. 4. "I am ... sportsman," I said. "Rowing is my favourite sport." 5. This is ... terrible thing for you, my poor child. 6. To look at Montmorency you would imagine that he was ... angel sent upon ... earth. 7. She was ... small woman, ... little shorter than Roy and considerably thinner. 8. I am ... old man who is afraid of no one. 9. ... town of Windsor is ... typically English town. 10. He was ... pretty baby and then ... good-looking child. 11. Jan's hand between his was ... anchor holding him steady in ... world they had built together. 12. Every time I meet you you're ... different person. — That's probably because you're ... different person too. 13. It is ... exceedingly bad little painting. One of ... worst I have ever seen. 14. She is ... most honest person I think I've ever met. 15. When Doctor Lewellyn retires I might be ... head doctor in his place. 16. This was ... warmly carpeted, restful, sunny room with ... superb view of ... river. 17. I think it is ... place I will choose. 18. ... human being is ... wonderful thing. 19. I was ... editor of our college paper. 20. All Edward wants at this moment is ... change of ... clothes and ... meal.

Exercise 6. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the use of the article with the noun object.

1. Soon he bought himself ... house on ... hills in Java and married ... pretty little Javanese. 2. Phuong was drinking ... glass of ... orange juice and we sat in silence, content to be together. 3. He wore ... steel helmet which threw ... shadow over his eyes. 4. They must have ... roof to cover them, ... house to shelter them. 5. She was wearing ... black skirt and ... bright red blouse of ... very fine poplin. 6. Doreen stood adjusting ... white hat on ... dark brown hair that framed ... pretty, pointed face. 7. He bought ... cup of ... tea and ... sandwich, poured ... milk into ... thick cup watching it mingle with ... black liquid. 8. He ordered himself ... bacon and ... eggs, and ... tea, then sat back and tried to read ... Sunday paper. 9. I had ... extraordinary dream last night. 10. It is necessary that you should conduct ... thorough investigation and submit ... report upon it. 11. She cut ... slice of her famous boiled ham and made Christine eat ... soft bread sandwich. 12. He meant to buy ... house and ... motor car. 13. He had ... grey hair, ... sanguine face, ... lively eyes, ... twisting eyebrows. 14. She had on ... simple yellow dress and ... big floppy hat she had worn when they arrived on Tuesday. 15. He made ... spontaneous decision. 16. Then she brought me ... large bowl of ... soup and I finished it every drop.

Exercise 7. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the use of the article with the noun in apposition.

1. After my mother died, my father, ... travelling man, sent me to live with his cousins. 2. Sometimes Herbert, ... big boy of sixteen now, would challenge another kite-flyer. 3. Hautin, ... lawyer by profession, had business dealings in the town. 4. Maidenhead, ... river resort, is one of ... loveliest reaches of ... River Thames. 5. His father, ... missionary, was killed in ... uprising. 6. Here is Doctor Sheppard, ... close friend of poor Roger's. 7. Hopkin's car, ... black Cadillac five years old, was driven by ... ageing Negro chauffeur. 8. I've arranged for you to call tomorrow on a friend of his, ... editor. 9. They live in Lynton, ... small village in Devonshire. 10. On ... way across ... river he chatted to ... boatman, ... local man. 11. After weeks

of ... worry with ... servants Christine chanced on Mrs Bennett, ... widow of forty, clean and hard-working, who because of her daughter, ... child of seven, had found it almost impossible to find ... job. 12. On his first day he went round with Doctor Eustace Thoroughgood, ... elderly man of fifty, well under ... middle height Under ... existing system, ... survival of ... old traditions, he was "responsible" for Andrew and for Doctor Milligan. 13. Sunday came fine, as she had hoped, ... soft spring day. 14. He rushed into ... little back yard of ... house, ... small well of ... darkness beneath ... stars. 15. Then ... second case came in, ... woman of forty-five, Miss Basden, one of ... most faithful of his followers.

Exercise 8. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the use of the article with the names of meals.

1. They got ... hearty breakfast from ... crew. 2. ... dinner was to be at seven, ... concert from eight to ten, ... supper from ten to eleven. 3. ... lunch was excellent, but I noticed that Isabel ate very little. 4. They arrested him after ... breakfast. 5. At this point ... maid announced that ... supper was served and Gilbert took his departure. 6. I was anxious to have ... good comfortable breakfast ready before I called Joe. 7. Sometimes he took me out to ... dinner or ... theatre. 8. After ... supper she proposed ... stroll in ... park to enjoy ... pleasant evening. 9. Bart waved his hand in ... ironic farewell. "Thanks for ... breakfast." 10. I'm going to find ... place for ... lunch. 11. There's ... bus after ... lunch. That suits you? 12. ... dinner was as good as it looked and smelled. 13. That's ... best dinner I've had in years. 14. He followed her into ... front room, where ... supper had been cleared from ... table. 15. "Now about ... supper," said John, after ... excitement had died down. 16. I thought I might give ... little dinner next week — just for you and Denny and Hope. 17. After ... dinner when coffee was brought in, ... talk became medical. 18. That evening Denny arrived, as he had promised, for ... supper. 19. Tonight they are giving him ... farewell dinner and everyone will be there. 20. I've got ... lecture at nine, so I should want ... breakfast at ... quarter past eight. 21. He had ... miserable lunch all alone. 22. She smiled at him. "Wash your hands and clean up. ... supper is

ready." 23. I do think you might have caught ... earlier train from Cambridge. I cooked ... special dinner for you to welcome you come. All your favourite things. 24. "You sit down," she said. "I'll cook you ... big breakfast."

Exercise 9. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the use of the article with nouns denoting the parts of the day.

1. It was ... hot day and there were many flies in ... room. 2. At ... dusk, on ... evening of St Valentine's Day Boldwood sat down to ... supper as usual. 3. ... morning was perfect but there was ... suggestion of ... approaching storm in ... air. 4. It was ... blue night with ... full moon hanging over ... city. 5. ... day had been fine and warm, but at ... coming of ... night ... air grew cold. 6. Even in ... broad day she looks beautiful. 7. He awoke in ... morning, feeling that something was wrong. 8. Don't give me ... milk. You know I hate it at this time of ... day. 9. It was mad, she knew, to let him go and play ... organ at this hour of ... night. 10. On ... day of his departure we had no classes. 11. On ... warm September evening he strolled idly to ... river. 12. ... dawn was breaking among ... olives, silvering their still leaves. 13. I came to Warley on ... wet September morning. 14. It was ... pleasant evening, warm and still. 15. When we started it was already ... morning. 16. ... next day, which was Friday, we got them all together, and met in ... evening to pack. 17. I feared to see him on ... day which followed this sleepless night. 18. The expected Monday was ... wild wet morning. 19. ... night was cloudy and still very dark. 20. ... next day his knee was badly swollen. 21. He spent most of ... evening in ... morning-room, playing ... bridge. 22. It was ... worse-than-usual night.

Exercise 10. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the use of the article with the nouns *bed, school, town, hospital*.

a) 1. She went up to ... bed and took her sleeping child. 2. I saw ... bed made up for me, and placed ... candle on ... old-fashioned chest of drawers. 3. He sprang out of ... bed, had ... cold bath and then had another look at ... watch. 4. I found ... edge of ... bed in ... dark and sat down on it and started putting on my shoes. 5. He hasn't been to ...

bed all night. 6. When he went to ... bed he kept his thoughts on her. 7. She went into ... little dark room — her room was like ... cupboard — and sat down on ... bed. 8. Jan lay in ... narrow hospital bed and tried to adjust herself to her new surroundings.

b) 1. He and his daughters walked up ... steps of ... school and entered ... narrow high-ceilinged hall. 2. It was ridiculous to feel that he had to send his children to ... private school. 3. They had two children, one of them still at ... school, ... other in her first year at ... university. 4. I must get used to getting up early. When I get home there will be my little girl to get ready for ... school. 5. Under normal circumstances you would have become ... head boy of ... school. 6. Then ... day came when I had to go back to ... school. 7. Richard's grandfather insisted that he attend ... law school, following ... family tradition. 8. When he was thirteen, he was sent to ... High School in the County Town.

c) 1. When we get back to ... town we'll get ... doctor to see your throat. 2. "If I met you on ... beach at ... midnight in that green get-up, I'd swear you were ... mermaid come to ... town." — "... mermaids don't come to ... town," she said laughing. 3. He looked clean and brushed; he was going to ... town for ... day. 4. ... Post Office clock was just striking seven, when we drove out of ... town and took ... sea-coast road. 5. We could hear ... voices of ... men from ... town, talking loudly together. 6. They were chasing round ... town while she waited for them. 7. You see, Chris, even in quite ... small provincial town you could have ... clinic.

d) 1. I can arrange for her to go along to ... public hospital. 2. If she goes to ... hospital now for some treatment and then on to ... sanatorium it ought to be quite all right. 3. Bart made his way carefully up ... red concrete path from ... hospital. 4. She wanted to assure him that everything was perfect here in ... hospital to which he had sent her, and for which he was paying. 5. I am only in ... hospital for four weeks. When I am out of here, I won't think of it. 6. So long as I live no one will ever make me go into ... hospital like this again. 7. Miss Blakeley needs ... great deal of ... extra attention. But this is ... sanatorium, not ... hospital. We don't

expect to have to nurse ... patients. 8. She had ... comfortable room at ... hospital. 9. He reached ... hospital, parked his car and went up to ... ward.

Exercise 11. Use the proper article where necessary. Pay attention to the nouns introduced by the preposition *with*.

1. "Oh, Harry?" cried ... lad, with ... ripple of ... laughter. 2. "Basil!" cried ... lad, clutching ... arms of his chair with ... trembling hands, and gazing at him with ... wild, startled eyes. 3. She drew back with ... haughty gesture, as if he had intended actually to touch her. 4. Samuel passed up ... square with ... rapt expression. 5. Roy could see ... things in ... bush that no other trapper saw, and could then recount it all with ... good story-teller's fascination for his subject. 6. On his way to ... station William remembered with ... fresh pang of disappointment that he was taking nothing to ... kiddies. 7. ... eyes were brown, with ... straight and eager glance. 8. I awaited, with ... sense of ... exhilaration, permanent thing. 9. He was dazed with ... horror. 10. It was ... little pink house with ... white snow on ... roof and ... green windows and ... brown door. 11. ... table roared with ... hysteric laughter at one of this woman's anecdotes. 12. My stomach was rumbling with ... hunger. 13. It was always he who inquired with ... great anxiety about my health. 14. I looked at it with ... incredulous delight. 15. Then men, again without ... order, scattered through ... farm. 16. She made it impossible for Roy to get ... money without ... good reason. 17. If only it were possible to love without ... injury.

Exercise 12. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the noun introduced by the preposition *in*.

1. Mr Povey put both his hands in his pockets, got up, went to ... window, whistled, and generally behaved in ... manner which foretold worst. 2. In ... united blush they turned away, up ... gradual slope. 3. He was in ... real hurry now, for he knew where he was going and he was willing to take ... chances. 4. He had to keep going west, west of Silver River, even northwest of it in ... giant circle. 5. ... lieutenant explained to me in ... low voice, stabbing ... finger at his map, "Three hundred have been reported in this village here." 6. ... poli-

tics are in ... sad way everywhere, I am told. They certainly are in England. 7. He looked at me in ... puzzled way. 8. Isabel wore ... jersey and her hair in ... plait. 9. Why are you not in ... uniform? 10. ... houses across streets were in ... ruins. 11. He looked up from his bootlaces in ... agony of ... embarrassment. 12. He looked at Dorian in ... absolute amazement. 13. "Where are those hunters now?" he asked in ... delight. 14. Bareheaded, all in white, with his sleeves rolled up to ... shoulders, he leaped into his place. 15. It was one of those remarks which aren't funny in black and white but irresistibly comic in ... actuality. 16. When he opened ... door ... parlour appeared in ... full illumination. 17. At ... far end, against ... wall, there was ... tall, slender pear-tree in ... fullest, richest bloom.

Exercise 13. Use the proper article. Pay attention to the nouns introduced by the prepositions *as* and *like*.

1. I am afraid that Lord Illingworth regards ... woman simply as ... toy. 2. Man of Orizava watched Chief keenly, as ... possible rival. 3. Mortified, as ... child from whom ... sixpence is filched, she said: "There's Wilfrid!" 4. He's sending you back your marriage lines as ... gentle reminder. 5. I'm not telling ... story for ... sake of talking merely, but as ... warning against ... betting. 6. Russia is considered as ... possible partner in trade. 7. ... British security forces operate as ... state within ... state. 8. Ernest is unvariably calm Nothing is so aggravating as ... calmness. 9. From ... plain mortar-bursts rose unchangingly smoke as solid as ... stone. 10. It seems to me to be simply like ... wonderful ending to ... wonderful play. 11. Her heart beat like ... heavy bell. 12. But it all seemed unreal, like ... picture in ... newspaper. 13. ... sky shone pale, and one bird drifted high like ... dark fleck in ... jewel. 14. From ... bridge they had ... sudden view of ... raw gash in ... earth; and ... hundreds of ... men were crawling about it, busy with ... minute operations, like ... flies in ... great wound. 15. They're covering this whole area like ... forestry patrol. 16. ... kitchen was large and clean and bright with ... electric oven which had ... control panel like ... bomber's. 17. ... marble floor glittered like ... water. 18. One watch-tower sank behind, another appeared, like ... weights on ... balance.

Exercise 14. Use the proper article in noun-groups with of-phrases.

1. At last she smiled and there was in her eyes ... look of ... superhuman love. 2. He could only see ... rows and rows of ... faces around him. 3. My tongue stuck to ... roof of my mouth and I could hardly articulate. 4. He was ... man of ... most subtle and refined nature, ... man of ... culture, ... charm and ... distinction. One of ... most intellectual men I ever met. 5. She heard this with ... strange feeling of ... curiosity and ... wonder. 6. It was ... very proper room for ... manager of ... first-class theatre. 7. By now they came to ... mouth of ... harbour. 8. ... crowd of ... young men, some in jerseys and some in their shirt-sleeves, got out. 9. She was lying asleep there, with her face on ... side of ... pillow. 10. ... odd feeling of ... curiosity made him look through ... key-hole. 11. George said that ... same kind of ... thing, only worse, had happened to him some months ago. 12. She looked ... pretty determined sort of ... woman. 13. If he had not known she was ... daughter of ... lord, he would have thought her American. 14. Bart could hear ... tinkling of ... china, ... rattling of ... silver, and ... gush of ... anger went through him. 15. Doreen felt ... pang of ... grief at ... thought of her father. 16. He heard ... soft plop of ... lighted gas and ... rattle of ... kettle. 17. Everywhere mingled with ... smell of ... cooking were ... odour of ... stale eau-de-Cologne, ... strong talcum powder and ... sharp smell of ... antiseptics. 18. ... chatter of ... other patients, ... noise of ... wireless, that poured out ... incessant stream of ... advertisements, was maddening. 19. You see she's ... daughter of ... great friend of mine, ... professional man, ... dentist. 20. She ought to have been more conscious of her standing as ... wife of ... professional man.

Exercise 15. Comment on the omission of the article in the following examples.

a) 1. Less than a year ago, the two of them seemed as close as mother and daughter could be. 2. We were more like brothers than father and son. 3. He was kept busy day and night with plans for his retirement. 4. He got up and began to pace the Turkey carpet, between window and wall. 5. All she knew was that he had been in the army and had lost both leg and eye

shortly before the surrender. 6. Warren Trent's face reddened with anger, "Don't play cat and mouse with me!"

b) 1. Listening to the minutes and other routine business he let his eyes move from face to face. 2. They went on from tune to tune till Fleur said: "My God! I am hungry now!" 3. They walked on again, but only hand in hand. 4. Nevill beat his hands on his sides and moved from foot to foot. 5. They went side by side, hand in hand silently towards the hedge. 6. The young man who had been turning his head from side to side became transfixed.

Exercise 16. Comment on the use of the article with abstract nouns.

1. He introduced himself with a smoothness that bypassed my awkwardness. 2. The rhododendrons were upon us. They already looked a little over-blown, a little faded. Theirs was a brief beauty. 3. Mor had a vague curiosity about this young man. 4. Their eyes met in a cold stare. 5. She thought of her girlish dreams sometimes with a smiling sadness. 6. There was a curious pleasure in lying awake in the night when all the rest of the ward was asleep. 7. He had a stubborn desire for his own way which the Committee did not like. 8. His anger rose to a sudden white heat. 9. Owen read the letter with a sudden brightening of his face. 10. He hung up the receiver between satisfaction and an odd irritation. 11. It seemed to him that she had fallen back upon an inner life where he could not penetrate. 12. I hoped that a merciful forgetfulness would help him to take up once more the burden of life. 13. He was conscious that she regarded him with a profound indifference. 14. Don't bother to make conversation for my benefit. I'm the type that prefers a quiet understanding. 15. If I can teach something to one child, if I can awaken in only one child a sense of beauty, a joy in truth, an admission of ignorance and a thirst for knowledge, then I am fulfilled.

Exercise 17. Comment on the use of articles with personal names.

1. There was a Manson at Queens with me in eighteen eighty. 2. This was not the Beatrice he knew. 3. Old Jolyon had little Holly on the knees, she had taken possession of his watch. 4. This Pat wasn't at all like the Pat of his memories.

When she smiled, he saw the Pat he had known, the Pat smiling at him from the worn photo that still lay in the pocket against his heart. 5. Between the Macphails and the Davidsons there had arisen the intimacy of shipboard. 6. The late Mrs Spenlow began life as a betweenmaid in a large house. 7. A Forsyte is not an uncommon animal. There are hundreds among the members of this Club. 8. He was not the Maxim I had first met, not the stranger who sat alone at the table in the restaurant. 9. Pardon, but could you tell me if a Mr and Mrs Robinson reside here? 10. She was easy to talk to, unaffected. This was a Magda with whom you could be on friendly terms, who made no demands on you, who met you completely on your own level. 11. "The Mrs Duncaster who's dead," said Walter, "is she the one I know?" 12. A strange company assembled in the Burnells' washhouse after tea. 13. Many years ago I made the acquaintance of a certain Mr William Legrand. 14. Do you know who Rosemary is? — Rosemary? The only Rosemary I know is Rosemary Paine. 15. The Mr Minho? How interesting! I've never read anything of yours. 16. Introductions followed, with much talk and laughter amongst the Ivories, the Freedmans and the Hamptons.

Exercise 18. Use the proper article where necessary.

1. ... room which looked upon ... small garden, was furnished with ... old-fashioned comfort. 2. ... coffee was gray with ... milk and I skimmed ... milk scum off ... top with ... piece of ... bread. 3. They finished ... meal in ... silence. 4. It's really hard to judge that sort of ... thing. 5. "Mrs Gibbons," I said in ... voice trembling with ... fear and ... anger. 6. Your camera is only ... instrument through which you express your art. 7. ... secret between those two remained ... secret. 8. She looked about ... drawing-room with ... expression of ... surprise. 9. Bill was awake and sitting on ... edge of ... bed. 10. We leaned on ... wooden rail of ... bridge and looked up ... river to ... lights of ... big bridges. 11. She came fresh from ... air of ... village, ... light of ... country still in her eyes. 12. Lily sank with ... sign into one of ... shabby leather chairs. 13. ... breakfast consisted of ... tea, too hot for her to drink, and ... burnt toast with ... great lumps of ... salty unmelted butter. 14. It was ...

brilliantly sunny morning and she was walking along ... river bank, ... long beach of yellow sand that sloped into ... water. 15. He was ... chef at ... Atlanta's only French restaurant. 16. His memory of those times was like ... house where no one lives and where ... furniture has rotted away. 17. They say ... first officer is down, so evidently ... captain passed ... message. 18. ... dinner, ... crew had, consisted of ... salmon, so ... food poisoning was quite possible. 19. ... night he spent in ... air seemed like ... hell. 20. ... shark is ... mystery of ... ocean, ... most dangerous thing among ... fish. 21. ... back of ... collar and ... upper part of ... shoulders were grey with ... dust. 22. That isn't ... sort of ... thing she likes. 23. She wore ... jersey sweater and ... tweed skirt and her hair was brushed back like ... boy's. 24. ... top of ... carriage was up and there were ... drops of ... water on ... driver's coat. 25. She was still kneeling, trying to take ... hook out of ... mouth of ... fish.

Exercise 19. Comment on the use of articles.

1. The poet was reading something written on a sheet of paper. He was surrounded by other men who looked like assistant producers. 2. Michael went up the stairs two at a time, and entered a large square room, where Mr Blythe, back to the door, was pointing with a ruler to a circle drawn on a map. 3. We were led into a spacious room furnished with the sort of furniture you would find in an English lodging-house at the seaside. 4. As we know there is often a great difference between the man and the writer. The writer may be bitter, harsh and brutal, while the man may be meek and mild. 5. As the weather grew warmer, the stale and heavy air depressed her more and more, and sometimes in a panic she would wonder what harm it was doing to her. But you couldn't tell; day after day, night after night, you lay there wondering, and you couldn't tell. 6. Jan listened to the clinking of glasses as the patients poured themselves drinks, the restless tossing of bodies so long in bed that the night was only a weary extension of the day. 7. When she thought that she would not see Bart for seven days in which the minutes and even the seconds drifted past more slowly than the yellowed leaves fluttering to earth in the windless air,

then time was like the ticking of a watch in which the springs had broken. 8. For a moment she stood looking over the garden, over the peace of the sapphire valleys, the stretch of plain like an inland sea between mountain scarps and the coast. For the first time since she had come there the peace no longer frightened her, the solitude no longer oppressed her. 9. The ward held twenty patients inside and a dozen more on the veranda. At first they were merely faces to Bart, sallow faces, bright rosy faces, young faces and old faces, all types from a grandfather of seventy-nine to a boy of twelve. 10. They made a quick breakfast, tea and bread and boiled ham, and were bumping down the road before the sun had struggled through the clouds. 11. When he reached Cincinnati it was snowing, a windy blustery snow. The flakes were coming down thick and fast. The traffic of the city had a muffled sound. 12. On the fourteenth of August, a fresh bright morning, in bustling health and immense spirits, Andrew ran up the steps of the building, the look in his eye that of a man about to conquer London.

Exercise 20. Use the proper article where necessary.

1. London, ... capital of England and ... mother city of ... British empire, is ... largest city in ... world, containing in ... administrative county and ... ring of suburbs nearly 9 million people. 2. ... morning, so fresh and cold, was delicious and for ... moment his eyes wandered out over ... garden with ... friendly glance. 3. Isn't it possible — can't I, at least, try to become ... kind of ... daughter and ... granddaughter that they would like? 4. ... sunburnt man with ... grey beard, in ... white clothes and wearing ... helmet came to meet us. 5. It was ... day in ... late April, and ... sweetness of ... spring was in ... air. 6. ... pleasure was like ... winter flower, it died swiftly. 7. And they all smiled, as if ... wind had come up suddenly in ... middle of ... hot afternoon. 8. He felt as fresh in her presence as one who is taken out of ... flash of ... summer to ... first cool breath of ... spring. 9. ... ring through ... door-bell sounding emphatically through ... empty house roused her suddenly. 10. Few days after her return to ... town she had ... unpleasant surprise of ... visit from Mr Rosedale. 11. ... cold, grey sky threatened ... rain, and ...

high wind drove ... dust in ... wild spirals up and down ... streets. 12. In ... tone in which she spoke to her grand-nephew, aged three, Miss Marple said, "I have ... very nice catalogue here, with ... pictures." 13. He took ... role home to Carrie and handed it to her with ... manner of one who does ... favour. 14. It hummed in her ears as ... melody of ... old song. 15. After ... few moments ... window above him was thrown up and ... head and ... shoulders of ... man protruded. 16. She was ... sort of ... woman who was always bothering about what other people would think. 17. She wasn't convinced that ... love is necessary to ... successful union. 18. I did not want you to return to ... cold, empty house. So I started ... fire and brought ... few things for you to eat. 19. ... elevators seemed slow this morning, Herbie Chandler thought. Impatiently he pressed ... call button ... second time.

Exercise 21. Use the proper article where necessary.

... basement room of ... bookstore seemed to be enormous; it stretched in ... long rows of ... books off into ... dimness at ... either end, with ... books lined in ... tall bookcases along ... walls, and ... books standing in ... piles on ... floor. At ... foot of ... spiral staircase winding down from ... neat small store upstairs, Mr Harris, ... owner and ... sales-clerk of ... bookstore, had ... small desk, cluttered with ... catalogues, lighted by one dirty overhead lamp. ... same lamp served to light ... shelves which crowded heavily around Mr Harris' desk; farther away, along ... lines of ... book tables, there were other dirty overhead lamps, to be lighted by ... pulling string and turned off by ... customer when he was ready to grope his way back to Mr Harris' desk, pay for his purchases and have them wrapped. Mr Harris, who knew ... position of any author or any title in all heavy shelves, had one customer at ... moment, ... boy of about eighteen, who was standing far down ... long room directly under one of ... lamps, leafing through ... book he had selected from ... shelves. It was cold in ... big basement room, both Mr Harris and ... boy had their coats on. Occasionally Mr Harris got up from his desk to put ... shovelful of ... coal on ... small, iron stove which stood in ... curve of ... staircase. Except

when Mr Harris got up, or ... boy turned to put ... book into ... shelves and take out another, ... room was quiet, ... books standing silent in ... dim light.

Exercise 22. Use the proper article where necessary.

a) Few, among those who visit India, describe it in ... same terms. ... reason is that ... real character of ... country is masked by its continental dimensions.

... country spreads 2,000 miles from ... icy heights of ... Himalayas in ... north to ... tip of ... Cape Comorin in ... tropical south, and about ... same distance from ... west to ... east. ... country encompasses ... geographical conditions, ... climate, ... scenery and ... people as diverse as those in Europe or Americas. It has some of ... tallest peaks, ... longest plains and ... wettest, hottest and coldest regions in ... world. But ... nature intended India to be ... distinct entity. Marked off from ... mainland of Asia by ... Himalayas and with ... sea on three sides, it possesses ... unity of its own which has left ... impress on ... people's mode of ... life and ... thought.

b) Legrand took ... paper angrily, and was about to throw it into ... fire when suddenly something in ... drawing attracted his attention. In ... instant his face grew red; in ... other it became white. For some minutes he went on looking at ... paper silently. Then he got up, took ... candle from ... table and carefully examined ... paper, turning it in all directions. At last he took ... notebook from his pocket, put ... paper into it and locked ... book in ... drawer of his writing-table.

c) "Floor please?" ... elevator operator said. He spoke in ... deep voice with ... slight Italian accent. Tom glanced at him. ... man was wearing ... plum-coloured uniform and had his back turned towards him. He was ... stout, dark-complexioned man about thirty years old with ... thick black hair only partly covered by ... plum-coloured cap shaped like ... army cap. Across ... back of his thick neck, just visible above his collar, was ... long, thin white scar. There was something startlingly familiar about ... slope of his narrow shoulders and ... deep voice. Tom stepped to one side to get ... better look at him, but ... elevator was getting crowded, and he couldn't see ... front of ... man's face.

Exercise 23. Use the proper article where necessary.

a) I looked at ... woman. She was sitting straight opposite me in ... big chair and had just thrown off her hat. She was ... unusual type — weary Madonna describes it best. She had ... fair, almost colourless hair, parted in ... middle and drawn straight down over her ears to ... knot on ... neck. Her face was dead white and yet curiously attractive. She impressed me, I think, as ... most tired person I had ever met.

b) Presently we hailed ... taxi. It put us down before ... brownstone house, narrow and rather high, and you ascended to ... front door by ... flight of ... steep steps. ... door was opened by ... tall stout Negro and we were ushered into ... drawing-room.

c) ... studio was filled with ... rich odours of ... roses, and when ... light summer wind stirred amidst ... trees of ... garden, there came through ... open door ... heavy scent of ... lilac, or ... more delicate perfume of ... pink-flowering thorn.

d) Beyond ... river rose ... plateau of ... town. All along ... old walls ... people were standing. Three lines of ... fortifications made three black lines of ... people. Above ... walls there were ... heads in ... windows of ... houses. At ... far end of ... plateau ... boys had climbed into ... trees.

e) "Rest, my dear — rest. That's one of ... most important things. There are three doctors in ... illness like yours," he laughed in ... anticipation of his own joke. "I don't mean only myself, my partner and ... radiologist who does your X-rays, three I'm referring to are Dr Rest, Dr Diet and Dr Fresh Air."

Exercise 24. Use proper article where necessary.

Mrs Hale loved to drive in ... afternoon in ... sun when it was fine, and to satisfy her soul with ... sight of those mansions which she could not afford. When ... winter season had passed and ... first fine days of ... early spring appeared, Mrs Hale secured ... buggy for ... afternoon and invited Carrie.

At this time of ... year ... days are still short, and ... shadows of ... evening were beginning to settle down upon ... great city. Carrie felt that it was ... lovely day. As they

drove along ... smooth pavement ... occasional carriage passed. She saw ... footman dismount, opening ... door for ... gentleman, who seemed to be leisurely returning from some afternoon pleasure. Across ... broad lawns she saw ... lamps faintly glowing upon ... rich interiors. Now it was ... chair, now ... table, now ... ornate corner, which met her eye, but it appealed to her as almost nothing else could. She was perfectly certain that here was ... happiness. If she could cross that rich entrance-way, which to her was of ... beauty of ... jewel, and sweep in ... grace and ... luxury to possession and command — oh! how how quickly would ... sadness flee; how, in ... instant, would ... heart-ache end.

ADJECTIVE

Exercise 1. Use the appropriate form of the adjective given in brackets and supply the article where necessary.

1. The hall was (full) when they arrived, but it seemed ever (full) now. 2. His shirt looked (yellow) than usual. 3. She looked very (nice) now in a (large) straw hat: it was (hot) that afternoon, (hot) day they had had, and beads of sweat stood in a line on her upper lip. 4. "Of all the (stupid) questions I've ever been asked," he said angrily, "that's (stupid)." 5. He was (hungry) than he had ever been in his life. 6. This path is (narrow) than that one. 7. She was (thin) and (white) than when last he had seen her. 8. You're (charming) girl I've ever seen in my life and (delightful). 9. She had never given anyone to understand that she was (poor) than the rest. 10. Her dance became (gay) than theirs: her feet scarcely touched the ground, she whirled round madly. 11. I feel (sorry) for George sometimes than I am for (poor) Needle. 12. Clutton, (silent) of them all, remained behind listening. 13. "I'd almost forgotten how (green) a tree can be," she whispered. "Back in Boston there's (green) oak tree you ever saw in your life." 14. His expectations, however, seemed to be (humble) than mine. 15. Runway zero-eight was (long) of the airport's three runways. 16. How (handsome) he was! He was (handsome) man in the party. 17. Oh, you are (wonderful), you're (wonderful) girl in the whole world. 18. His eyes are (true) things I ever saw. 19. Miss Pennefeather got (dull), Lottie (mad) and Mrs Gordelier (exasperating) than ever. 20. After all, it was (complete) thing, and perhaps (dead) in

the London of today. 21. He is much (good) now than yesterday. 22. "Oh! Dad, you are (good) in the world. — "That means (bad)," thought Jolyon.

Exercise 2. Translate into English.

1. Вы самый медленный бегун, какого я когда-либо встречал. 2. Вечером море стало еще красивее. 3. Он был самый добрый и самый приятный человек, которого я когда-либо знала. 4. Эта комната казалась больше и удобнее, чем та. 5. Я думаю, что Джейн самая красивая девушка из всех. 6. Я рада, что вы более добрый человек, чем я, Том. 7. Ее называли Эллой, так как это было самое модное имя для девочек в то время. 8. Этот цветок желтее того. 9. Вам следует помнить, что Том на десять лет моложе Джека. 10. Она учила его, где находится Черное море, какая самая длинная река и как называется самая высокая гора в России. 11. Я сейчас больше устала, чем когда-либо. 12. Мой отец, бывало, говорил, что он был самым способным человеком из всех его друзей. 13. Он увидел, что бледное лицо его двоюродного брата стало еще бледнее. 14. Вы самая храбрая женщина, которую я когда-либо знал. 15. Мой младший брат умнее Джона. 16. На столе стояла тарелка с печеньем, две чашки и сахарница. Печенье было самое дешевое. 17. Он самый лучший пианист, не правда ли?

Exercise 3. Comment on the use of the underlined adjectives.

1. She was his oldest child. 2. 'Come and shake hands with Mr Carey, Sally.' He turned to Philip. 'Isn't she enormous? She's my eldest. How old are you, Sally?' 'Fifteen, father, come next June.' 3. Marie climbed hastily into the nearest compartment and was lost to sight. 4. Next morning Mildred was sulky and taciturn. 5. No further news had come. 6. In the further corner sat Philbric, talking in Welsh to a shady-looking old man. 7. The last laugh died away. 8. The latest news was very important. 9. The wooden bridge was nearly three quarters of a mile across. 10. His wooden face creased into a smile and then returned to its former unexpressiveness. 11. She sent him a gold cigarette case. 12. The sand was golden yellow as if the sun struck through the water all the way to the bottom of the sea.

Exercise 4. Use the appropriate form of the adjective given in brackets.

1. His age was fifty; he looked several years (old). 2. 'It is one of his worse days, Mother,' said the (old) son. 3. The (old) brother came from the stable and Bill stood still, hands clenched. 4. Jim was (old) by only four years but already there was gray in his hair and deep lines in his face. 5. Uncle Charles and Dante clapped. They were (old) than his father and mother but Uncle Charles was (old) than Dante. 6. Eleanor went downstairs to the dining-room where her husband, his parents and his three (old) children were assembled for luncheon.

Exercise 5. Translate into English.

1. Поезд опоздал на две минуты. 2. Скажите, пожалуйста, кто последним вошел в зал? 3. Последние известия по телевидению начинаются в девять часов. 4. Последнее издание этой книги уже распродано. 5. В дальнейшем конце зала была сцена, на которой стояли четыре человека из оркестра и играли вальс. 6. Она знала, что дальнейшего обсуждения ее доклада не будет. 7. Мне хотелось бы посмотреть на его машину, которая стояла в самом дальнем углу двора. 8. Скажите, пожалуйста, где ближайшая булочная? 9. В течение следующих трех дней ни Филипп, ни он не видели друг друга. 10. У матери часто бывает особое чувство к старшему сыну. 11. Элеонора была в детской с тремя старшими детьми и вышла оттуда в их сопровождении. 12. Джейн была на год старше Марии. У нее были густые черные волосы и темно-голубые глаза. 13. Он выглядел старше своих тридцати лет.

Exercise 6. Intensify the adjectives in the following sentences.

1. He was shorter than I was, and not more than an inch or two taller than Irene, but his shoulders, neck and wrists were strong. 2. I didn't think it was serious. 3. I want Mrs Lash flown to New Orleans by the fastest means. 4. Clive says there must be about ten blankets on the bed, and with each one you take off he gets colder. 5. Sonny was gayer, more cheerful, and Michael realized what that gaiety meant. 6. "He's not tall, not good looking," he said. I shook my

head and said, "It's not important." 7. He brought his project in the simplest way. 8. The dispute grew more violent. 9. It was a large and handsome house, finer than mine. 10. He was the ablest manager among the Master's party. 11. The silence grew oppressive and Piggy held his breath. 12. I told you, doctor, my headache wasn't bad. 13. When I was a boy out here three years ago they were the happiest, jolliest years. 14. "Don't you think it might be wiser if we turned out the light?" said Mr Sniggs. 15. It was one of the happiest afternoons he had ever spent there. 16. Philip grew better. 17. His voice became low. 18. The blood pressure became worse. 19. Jennie was kind to point out that this was what I had just been suggesting. 20. Mary was well aware that Nina would be perfectly willing to discuss the whole matter with her in the frankest way. 21. Our lives, our marriage, our children, are more important than your work.

Exercise 7. Translate into Russian. Pay special attention to the degrees of comparison of the adjectives.

1. He made her feel like the most interesting, fascinating girl in the world. 2. Wells regarded him with the greatest kindness. 3. Our teacher is a most pleasant and intelligent young man. 4. It's not natural that you should go there now. It's most unnatural. 5. There is a most interesting article in the 'Educational Review' on the new method that are being tried at the Innesborough High School. 6. It was no longer possible to hear exactly what she said. Miss Taylor was the quickest in the hospital of guessing what Granny Smith's remarks might be, but Miss Barnacle was the most inventive. 7. At last we are here. The forest is the most beautiful in Africa, a house of jewels. 8. She is a most unbalanced woman. 9. "That's a most extraordinary request, Mr Sidney," he said. 10. He wandered thus one May night into Regent Street and the most amazing crowd he had ever seen. 11. She was having a most distressing time with Ann. 12. Delphine came up with her Sergeant-Major and greeted me like her dearest friend. 13. The greatest ideas are the simplest. 14. Everyone was most anxious to get to the camp in time.

Exercise 8. Translate into English.

1. Ник весьма способный и трудолюбивый студент. 2. Он чувствовал себя все лучше и лучше. 3. Не так уж трудно найти друга, на которого можно положиться. 4. Москва для него была всегда намного привлекательнее зимой, чем летом. 5. Она надела нарядную коричневую юбку и белую кофту, что делало ее намного моложе, чем она была на самом деле. 6. «Моему отцу только шестьдесят лет. Он прекрасно ходит на лыжах», — сказал Том. «Не такой он уж молодой», — сказал Джек. 7. Том, вы хотите быть более полезным, чем Джон? 8. Она была гораздо моложе своей сестры и менее веселая. 9. У нас есть чрезвычайно важные новости для вас. 10. Ваша память несколько не лучше моей. 11. Он весьма забавный собеседник. 12. Музыка звучала громче и громче по мере нашего приближения к парку. 13. Мы попытаемся подняться на гору отсюда. Я думаю, что это самый легкий путь, какой только можно себе представить. 14. Вы самый большой друг, какой когда-либо у меня был. 15. Он весьма привлекательный человек. 16. Город был даже более оживленным, чем она предполагала. 17. Не так уж просто стать учителем иностранного языка. 18. Защитные крути от небольшого цветного зонтика становились все меньше и меньше, а затем исчезли. 19. Он взглянул на Анну, улыбнулся и сказал: «Ты все-таки самая добрая». 20. Неужели так важно, чтобы Майкл пошел купаться сейчас? 21. Мы вынуждены были отложить поездку за город, так как погода становилась все хуже и хуже.

Exercise 9. Fill in appropriate articles before substantivized adjectives where necessary.

1. She was twenty-four. Her skin was pale with a touch of ... green. 2. She had dressed carefully — the dress matching the tone of her skin seemed to emphasize ... green of her eyes. 3. Fanny Price coloured. The blood under her unhealthy skin seemed to be ... strange purple. 4. The sky was ... light, radiant blue, but, although it was only early afternoon, a mist was creeping on to the brilliant grass. 5. His eyes were large and blue, but ... blue was very pale, and they looked rather tired already. 6. I have nice hair. It is black — ... real black, not ... dark brown. 7. The sun

in the west was a drop of ... burning gold that slid nearer and nearer the sill of the world. 8. I enjoyed the sensation of sitting quietly beside her and looking at ... pale gold of her hair and ... pale gold of her skin. 9. Ralph ignored Jack's question. He pointed to the touch of ... yellow above the sea. 10. There was a scent of honey from the lime trees in flower, and in the sky ... blue was beautiful, with a few white clouds which looked and perhaps tasted like lemon ice. 11. He himself had always liked ... French, feeling at home with their wit, their taste, their cooking. 12. He's ... Swiss, I believe. 13. I thought he was ... Turkey as he spoke ... fluent Turkish. 14. You can't be a captain because you don't know ... Italian well enough. 15. I only write about what a beautiful place we live in and how brave ... Italians are. 16. ... Swiss are a very intelligent race and keenly alive to architectural beauty. 17. At dinner I ate very quickly and left for the villa where ... British had their hospital. 18. I was obviously ... German in Italian uniform. 19. You don't understand ... German, do you? 20. She wasn't ... Swede, like her husband. 21. It would be better to be in the study hall than out in ... cold. 22. You're too brave. Nothing ever happens to ... brave. The coward dies a thousand deaths, ... brave but one. 23. It was always your ambition to be a nurse and help ... sick ever since you were a little child, wasn't it? 24. Philip learned how little there was in common between ... poor and classes above them. 25. Old Jolyon sighed; he had an insatiable appetite for ... young. 26. We'll be getting to Twelve Oaks in a little bit, and every man there, ... old and ... young, wanting to know about the horses.

Exercise 10. Translate into English.

1. Прекрасное всегда радует глаз. 2. Он внезапно вышел из комнаты. 3. Небо было ярко-голубое. 4. Черный был определенно не ее цвет. 5. Не стойте на холоде. Вы хотите заболеть? 6. Это были люди, которые посвятили себя изучению неизвестного. 7. У нее были темно-золотистые волосы, темно-коричневые глаза, а кожа бледно-золотистая. 8. Старые не всегда и даже большую часть времени не чувствуют себя старыми. 9. Элиза была прекрасна в чер-

ном и белом. 10. Мне нравится ваша седина на висках. 11. Они просили его о невозможном. 12. У нее были темно-голубые сердитые глаза. 13. Я полагаю, вы правы, все идет к лучшему. 14. Он принял неизбежное. 15. Большинство раненых были спокойны, но некоторые очень шумели. 16. Когда мы вместе работали, я делал вам много хорошего. 17. Он, бывало, вознаграждал добрых и наказывал жестоких. 18. У нее были необыкновенные способности смешивать главное со второстепенным. 19. Ее мысли были заняты будущим. 20. Джейн была высокая, смутлая и красивая. Она была одета в белое, а в ее черных волосах сияли бриллианты. 21. Они русские. Русские — прекрасный народ. 22. Говорят, он не швед, а болгарин. 23. Он хорошо говорил по-немецки и гораздо хуже по-английски. 24. Я думал, что вы сказали, что он француз, так как он хорошо говорит по-французски. 25. «Не может быть, что вы англичанин, так как вы недостаточно хорошо знаете английский. Вы даже и не итальянец». «Я чех, но я был в Италии, — сказал я, — и говорил по-итальянски».

NUMERAL

twelve hundred lire. 18. For some time after that the gentleman was silent. It was interesting to see him, taking a look, making a stroke on the paper, taking another look. Hundreds of looks, hundreds of strokes.

Exercise 1. Comment on the use of the numerals in the following sentences.

1. The two sisters lived for each other as did Honor and Gavin. 2. There is a letter for you, Philip. It came by the second post. 3. He flashed a conspiratorial grin at the other two. 4. During that time they had a second child, a boy. 5. He looked round guiltily at the three boys standing by. 6. There were two stewardesses, at the moment, in the tourist cabin. Now a third stewardess appeared from the first class compartment forward, and the three of them were holding a hurried conversation. 7. And with something of a thrill he saw that Eldersom was a fourth player. 8. Simon knelt on all fours and was sick till his stomach was empty. 9. After less than five minutes of that perfect silence Soames came in. 10. "The five of them ought to be photographed," said Regan, surveying her grandchildren. 11. The man seemed to be in his late forties, with a long sandy mustache trailing across his lip. 12. Boys lingered talking to one another, and presently some who had hurried to change came out to play fives; others straggled out in twos and threes and went out of the gateway: Philip knew they were going up to the cricket ground. 13. I began to earn my own living when I was fifteen. 14. His voice had a thousand modulations. 15. There are nearly two million front doors in London. 16. Well, you or somebody ought to give him a look-up-last of the old lot; he's a hundred, you know. 17. Catherine had a little over

Exercise 2. Write in words.

4, 14, 40; 5, 15, 50; 9, 19, 90, 9th, 90th; 8, 8th, 18th, 80th.

Exercise 3. Fill in appropriate articles where necessary.

1. It was only ... fifth of July, and no meeting was fixed with Fleur until ... ninth. 2. June walked straight up to her former friend, kissed her cheek, and ... two settled down on a sofa never sat on since the hotel's foundation. 3. He'd catch ... two o'clock train back to New York. 4. She is quite aged for ... seventy, isn't she? What I would call ... old seventy. 5. The letter bored him, and when it was followed next day by another, and the day after by ... third, he began to worry. 6. Philip looked at his uncle with disapproval when he took ... second piece of cake. 7. He walked along thoughtfully. He wasn't going to be one of ... lucky ten who were going to be taken back. 8. "Miss Luce will be ... second mother to the children," she said. 9. They talked of ... thousand things, and they all talked at once. 10. James looked at her sideways, and placed ... second piece of ham in his mouth. 11. The phone rang almost immediately ... third time. 12. The phone, ringing for ... fourth time, interrupted his thoughts. 13. ... three times I have already done that. Everything! Then this time will make ... fourth. 14. That question, too, he had asked himself ... thousand times. 15. Once more he had used the service stairs from ... eighth floor to ... ninth.

PRONOUN

Exercise 1. Insert the proper form of the personal pronoun in brackets.

1. I had turned and faced (he). He was taller than (I).
2. I only mean I'm sorry the captain's (I). 3. He'll be between (you) and (I), anyway. 4. It was (he) before whom she felt defeat. 5. It was (she) who asked the next question. 6. It's (they) whom I pity desperately. 7. "She's better at it than (we) are," said Nora. 8. It was (I), not Martin, who had insisted on seeing (he) that night — because I wanted his support. 9. I recalled, too, there had been some talk between Tom Wells and (she). 10. Now here you are, safe and sound. And you have your home and Eliza and (he). 11. This is (I) who can help you.

Exercise 2. Choose the appropriate form of the possessive pronoun.

1. I went (my, mine) way, and she went (her, hers). 2. He left (her, hers) with (their, theirs) child. 3. What was this experiment of (your, yours)? 4. He slipped (his) arm in (her, hers). 5. From this point onward (their, theirs) story comes in two versions, (my, mine) and (her, hers). 6. The Minister's room was only two doors from (my, mine). 7. "That thought is not (me, mine)," he said to himself quickly. 8. Where's (your, yours) seat? I shall go to (my, mine). 9. Call me what you like. You have chosen (your, yours) part, we have chosen (our, ours). 10. His nature was harder than most of (their, theirs).

Exercise 3. Translate into English.

a) 1. Он кончил обедать и положил нож и вилку на стол. 2. Она заглянула в спую комнату и быстро верну-

лась в его. 3. Она пошла в ванную комнату, чтобы вымыть лицо и руки. 4. Джек сел прямо и вытянул ноги. 5. Ральф покачал головой и вышел из комнаты. 6. Доктор положил руку на ее плечо. 7. Он знал, что мои симпатии были на его стороне. 8. Он был на два года старше меня и моей подруги.

б) 1. Ее дядя был ректором университета. — И мой тоже. 2. «Он, может быть, один из моих давнишних пациентов», — сказал Филипп. 3. У меня было странное чувство, когда мы говорили о его друзьях. 4. Это одна из моих соседок. 5. Сэм и Джейн очень преданы этому другу. 6. Я полагаю, что я прав, думая, что он один из ваших учеников. 7. Его взгляд встретился с моим. 8. Вы прекрасно выглядите в своей форме. 9. Он сын моего старого друга. 10. Его английский звучал так же хорошо, как и их. 11. В те дни я редко видел своего школьного друга и стеснялся в его присутствии так же, как и он в моем. 12. Сегодня утром мне звонила по телефону одна из моих племянниц. 13. Том недавно получил письмо от школьного друга. 14. Ваша собака портит сад. На вашем месте я бы не держала собаку в саду. 15. Вы принесли попугая! — Да, разве он не ваш? Майкл сказал мне, что он принадлежит вам. 16. Она посмотрела на него безразличными глазами. 17. Этот его взгляд был очень холодным и странным. 18. У него было такое же живое воображение, как у меня.

с) 1. Он посмотрел на Майкла своими добрыми глазами. 2. Поехать за город в воскресенье было еще одной прекрасной идеей Тима. 3. Он был одним из двоюродных братьев Джона. 4. Он говорит, что он один из ваших друзей или вы один из его друзей. 5. Он коллега моего отца. Я знаю его всю свою жизнь. 6. Он знал, что этот человек был одним из родственников отца, которого он давно не видел. 7. Они отдыхали в санатории на берегу Черного моря и встретили много друзей своих родителей. 8. Он получил большое удовольствие от своих поездок в Крым. 9. Он был одним из лучших учеников моей матери. 10. Его речь была выслушана с большим вниманием. 11. Он никогда раньше не слышал об этом странном замужестве Элизы.

Exercise 4. Point out the reflexive and emphatic pronouns. State their functions. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. Robert set himself four drawings per week. 2. Leidner himself is a delightful fellow — so modest and unassuming. 3. James himself had given him his first brief. 4. She had taught Holly to speak French like herself. 5. There was a frame and in it a photograph of herself as a little girl. 6. They themselves were longing to ask Soames how Irene would take the result. 7. His eyes reconcentrated themselves quickly on the button-hook. 8. I'll see him myself tomorrow. 9. If June did not like this, she could have an allowance and live by herself. 10. She wrote the words to those melodies herself. 11. I thought to myself that it was always the same way. 12. I thought what a pretty girl she was herself. 13. His friendship with Michael, begun in hospital, had languished and renewed itself suddenly.

Exercise 5. Insert the proper self-pronoun.

1. "Sit down, Peter," she said, seating ... in a chair opposite him. 2. The boat was expected between the eighth and tenth of August. I allowed ... to sit gazing out to sea in the hope that it would appear before time. 3. At two o'clock I was cooling ... in the lake. 4. The butler ... opened the door, and closing it softly, detained Soames on the inner mat. 5. "By Jove!" thought Jolyon; "Soames...! What's he up to now?" 6. Timothy's eyes left the fly, and levelled ... on his visitor. 7. You even called ... by your fancy real name. 8. Her eyes were a book in 9. And since Scarlett had married and moved into her own home, she had been generosity 10. She opened to him 11. You can speak to him

Exercise 6. Translate into English.

1. Я сама увижу его завтра. 2. Я могу вам дать свою собственную фотографию. 3. Затем ей самой захотелось что-то сделать. 4. «Будет скандал», — пробормотал Джеймс как будто самому себе. 5. Она себя не понимала. 6. Если он занят, я могу пойти на танцы одна. 7. Вернись, мой мальчик, и закрой дверь. Двери сами не закрываются, не правда ли? 8. Вы можете слышать себя повсюду, куда бы

вы ни поехали. 9. Он удивлялся самому себе. 10. Они предпочитали пить чай одни, а после чая играли в шахматы. 11. В тот вечер она была сама доброта. 12. Были такие моменты, когда ему было чрезвычайно жалко самого себя. 13. Им всегда нравилась песня «Катюша». 14. Он страшно упрекал себя за свое поведение в тот вечер. 15. Когда она была готова, она посмотрела в зеркало. 16. Он взобрался на дерево и увидел квадратную вершину горы. 17. Он часто разговаривал сам с собой. 18. В тот вечер они должны были обедать одни. 19. Кофе был готов. Она налила себе чашку и села за стол.

Exercise 7. Insert each other or one another.

1. The old couple looked at 2. They were red in the face and found looking at ... for a moment. 3. The rest of us looked at ... in amazement. He looked shrewdly at the three. 4. Joan and Roy spoke to ... only about the game. 5. For the next three days neither Philip nor they spoke to 6. The two boys faced 7. The two girls leant towards ... and spoke in tones audible to no one else. 8. In time, they were joined by others — Olwen Kirby, Lesley Stevens, Jill Ballam. Nervously, they grinned at 9. The two families don't know 10. The two stood gazing at ... for a minute in silence. 11. And for a moment they all three stood silently looking at 12. The twins looked at ... glumly. 13. For a moment nothing more was said. And then Simmon and Ralph suddenly smiled at 14. These three ladies disliked and distrusted 15. The twins, still sharing their identical grin, jumped up and run round 16. They sat opposite ..., as they had so often sat before.

Exercise 8. Translate into English. Pay attention to the use of the demonstrative pronouns.

1. «У вас губы синие от ягод», — сказал Ник. «И у вас тоже», — сказала Алиса. 2. В те первые августовские дни у меня было мало дел на работе. 3. Это очень большой роман. Боюсь, что за два дня я его не прочитаю. 4. Он говорил ей о своей работе в больнице, а она рассказала ему, что она делала в тот день в университете. 5. Это Майкл, а не Мартин настаивал, чтобы мы встретились в тот вечер.

6. В тот день я болел и не был на занятиях. 7. Этот дом действительно в ужасном состоянии. 8. В тот вечер Мартин никому не отвечал на вопросы.

Exercise 9. Substitute *that* or *those* for the repeated noun.

1. Their poetry was not the poetry of Milton and Byron and Tennyson. 2. Scarlett's eyes met the eyes of Grandma. 3. The expression on his face was the expression of a crossed child, intent on something that he has not got. 4. The trees in our garden are taller than the trees in the park. 5. But the train seemed to run twice as fast now, and its sound was almost lost in the sound of Jon's sighing. 6. Most people would consider such a marriage as the marriage of Soames and Irene quite fairly successful. 7. His eyes were melancholy as the eyes of a monkey. 8. His son saw him gravely hanging up his coat, with an expression on his face like the expression of a boy who intends to steal cherries. 9. The climate of Moscow is better than the climate of St Petersburg. 10. "Oh!" she said and the disappointment in her voice was the disappointment of a child who opens a beautifully wrapped package to find it empty.

Exercise 10. Analyse the italicized pronouns and state whether they are relative, conjunctive or interrogative.

1. *What* was the matter with the fellow that he looked so happy? 2. Maybe he just forgot *what* it was like to be young. 3. Peter inquired sharply, "*Who* are you?" — "Do you mean *who* or *what*?" 4. With a jerk the mechanism took hold and the elevator started down. "*Which* elevator is this?" — "Number four." 5. He shifted to the side window *which* overlooked the stableyard, and whistled down to the dog Balthasar, *who* lay for ever under the clock tower. 6. *What* do I need her for? 7. He knew *what* was happening, of course. 8. "Allen, *whose* apartment is this?" she said quietly. "*Mine*, if I want it." — "But *who* does it belong to now?" 9. He was the architect of this very house *that* we live in now. 10. He got up from the window-seat and roamed in the big grey ghostly room, *whose* walls were hung with silvered canvas. 11. *What* passed at their meeting was not recorded in detail. 12. "Isn't she Miss?" said Gavin to his sister, with a gesture towards

Faith. "Yes, that is *what* you would call me," said the latter. 13. All *that* was left was to compose the letter. 14. He was very unorthodox, *which* frightened them. 15. *What* he saw seemed to satisfy him. 16. The first thing she asked him was *what* he thought of Avise Crichton. 17. He looked very well-bred, *which* indeed he was, and he had exquisite manners. 18. I often think of those people *who* used to cross our threshold and accept our hospitality. 19. When supper was over, Jane and a small brother were sent down to a brook *that* ran at the bottom of the meadow to fetch a pail of water for washing up. 20. The candles were still burning in the dining-room and the first thing he saw when he entered was *what* remained of the supper they had eaten, the two plates, the two cups and the frying-pan in *which* Mary had cooked eggs and bacon.

Exercise 11. Fill in conjunctive, relative or interrogative pronouns.

1. He changed the subject to the only one ... could bring the majority of them together. 2. It was Martin ... was freer, not Irene. 3. ... am I speaking to, please? 4. I don't care ... he says to me, I know I'm a real artist. 5. Everything ... had gone before, was like nothing. 6. ... side of the bed do you like, Mum? 7. They reached the street in ... she lived. 8. There was a suspicion of truth in ... she said, and it made Philip angry enough to answer ... first came into his head. 9. She bade him a casual good-night, ... made him think he had been dreaming. 10. The little ... Martin said had not been friendly. 11. "My shoulder hurts," I said. "... shoulder?" I touched my left shoulder. 12. He asked Mrs Otter whether she knew ... had become of her. 13. He was late, ... made her angry. 14. Good evening, Mrs Kennedy. And ... of you ladies is Mrs Wilkes? 15. Clutton put his hands over his eyes so that he might concentrate his mind on ... he wanted to say. 16. The last thing ... any of us wants is breakfast. 17. ... was he like? 18. Please make up your mind, therefore, whether you want me to decorate for you, or to retire, ... on the whole I should prefer to do. 19. And he began considering ... of those windows could be hers under the green sunblinds. 20. He pulled the handkerchief off his face, got up from the sofa on ... he was lying, and went into

- 48 the dining-room. 21. ... troubled him most was the uselessness of Fanny's effort. 22. Mr Wells told me — and I quote his own words — that it was one of the sweetest, kindest things ... was ever done for him. 23. ... do you think I want tea for?

Exercise 12. Omit the relative pronouns where possible.

1. He returned to his desk and dialled a number which he knew by heart. 2. I wrote other novels which were published, and I write plays. 3. His eyes, which were hot and inquisitive, looked from Martin to me. 4. In the dark and the cold of the morning they drove out the country road through the mist that hung heavy over the flat. 5. He was the architect of this very house that we live in now. 6. The telephone, which was on a side table beside Guy's chair, mercifully rang out. 7. Rarely, a plane leaf floated down, in an autumnal air that was at the same time exhilarating and sad. 8. All that I could then do was sit back and wait. 9. He lost himself in a maze of thoughts that were rendered vague by his lack of words to express them. 10. He offered a cigarette which the pilot refused. 11. It was the first time that I had heard John talk about Jack. 12. She came into a room in which a child was sleeping and drew the curtains. 13. Now his wife sat with her head forward on her hands that rested on the table. 14. Often they discussed things about which he knew nothing.

Exercise 13. Insert both in its proper place.

1. We are wounded a little. 2. We can't stay here together. 3. "Will you be silent?" said Eleanor. 4. They are in their last year at Cambridge. 5. They remained there laughing and talking until two-thirty. 6. You see, they're old. 7. They paused. 8. They have been waiting for an hour. 9. We were determined to play tennis. 10. They want you to come there presently and stay. 11. They passed him through the curtain opening.

Exercise 14. Insert all in its proper place.

1. "Were they together?" said Eleanor. 2. They seemed clever. 3. We thought we were progressing — now we know we're only changing. 4. I don't care what people say, they

can't be bad. 5. The meetings have been in public places, without concealment. 6. They were very happy. 7. His father and his uncles had complained of liver. 8. It's very boring. 9. They would be so happy there. 10. "We have done that," said Regan, rapidly blinking her eyes.

Exercise 15. Insert *each* or *every*.

1. He had been sitting out there, looking suddenly quite horrible with a hand on ... knee. 2. She and Ethel exchanged voluminous letters. Ethel described ... detail of ... current affair. 3. The bedrooms were all the same, ... with a window and a door giving onto the court-yard. 4. He was a kind host, however, for though he circulated freely throughout the room talking to his guests, ... few minutes he would appear at his wife's side to see that she was happy and comfortable. 5. During the next week, Tom did four more drafts of the speech, ... of which Hopkins praised highly before asking for a rewrite. 6. He didn't answer. He had no doubt that she meant ... word she said. 7. There was ... kind of news in the paper: accidents, shipwrecks, sports, and politics. 8. He cleared his throat three times to speak and failed ... time. 9. We sat around silently for a moment, ... trying to think of some possibility that we had overlooked. 10. ... few hours a fishing village came into sight. 11. The two little girls held his hands, one on ... side. 12. ... pillar had its shadow and ... shadow its crouching patient.

Exercise 16. Translate into English. Pay attention to the use of the pronouns *each* and *every*.

1. Каждый школьник знает правила дорожного движения. 2. Это была большая комната с крашеным потолком и гобеленом на каждой стене. 3. Она встречала его на катке каждую субботу. 4. Известно, что почти каждый ребенок любит яблоки. Мы дали каждой девочке и каждому мальчику по яблоку. 5. Каждую неделю я проводил несколько дней в деревне. 6. Он продолжал смотреть на часы каждые пять минут. 7. Они прислали мне два билета в Большой театр. Каждый билет стоил пятьсот рублей. 8. Каждый студент должен знать свои обязанности. 9. Хотя в комнате никто не жил, тетя Керри убирала ее каждый

день. 10. Каждый из нас должен был выполнить свою работу вовремя. 11. Когда он был студентом, он каждый год ездил на Урал. 12. У каждого близнеца был мяч. 13. Он пожал руку каждому гостю. 14. Он навещает нас каждое воскресенье. 15. Преподаватель сказал, что каждый из нас должен внимательно прочитать эту статью. 16. Мы встречаемся с друзьями каждое лето на юге. 17. В нашей деревне двести домов, и около каждого дома есть сад. 18. На конференции каждому дали блокнот и ручку.

Exercise 17. Fill in *either* or *neither*.

1. Rina was sleeping soundly, her dolls, Susie and Mary, on ... side of her. 2. At the front there were four windows, two on ... side of the door. 3. The sound they heard then made both of them start slightly, though ... observed it in the other. 4. They each had a large cup of something called coffee, which looked like tea and didn't taste particularly like 5. He wanted to read something and told her to stop talking; she did not know whether to obey or to get angry, and was so puzzled that she did 6. On ... side of the stage the candles burned steadily in gently ascending lines. 7. Tom and Nick both shuddered at the thought of meeting a wolf in the forest. But ... said a word. 8. He followed her into the front room, where Helen and Matthew were sitting stiffly on ... side of the fireplace with its big overmantel mirror. 9. Young Jolyon put his hand on his father's shoulder, and, as ... spoke, the episode closed. 10. Both the pilots were in. But ... of them heard the stewardess enter.

Exercise 18. Insert *either*, *neither* or *both*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. They ... laughed and Dan looked down at his desk. 2. We were ... in the room, but ... of us spoke for some time. 3. Then, carrying a valise in ... hand, he stepped out on the landing. 4. Hatton entered the room, and he looked at her and hesitated, and then took the open book in ... his hands and came to her side. 5. He was led to a place at the head of one of the tables. The boys on ... side of him stood up very politely until he sat down. 6. I guess we're ... a little bit overtired. 7. He looked from Singer to Philip, but ... answered. 8. "Come with

me and I will give you one of my own photographs," said Eleanor. "Then you can have your parents on ... side of your fireplace." 9. Hatton took ... the plates in one hand, and Nevill's hand in the other, and led the way from the room. 10. She expected men to talk about football and racing, and Philip knew nothing of 11. They were ... running hard, but someone was ahead of them. 12. He spent a restless and unsettled vacation, quite out of touch with ... of his two sisters. 13. ... of the two women, perhaps, could have said why they were stopped in mid-argument. 14. I think you can ... read this poem by heart. 15. Soames added: "Well, I hope you'll ... enjoy yourselves."

Exercise 19. Translate the sentences into English. Pay attention to the use of the pronouns *both, either, neither, all*.

1. Попросите их всех прийти вовремя. 2. Мы с мамой обе остались здесь ждать старшего брата. 3. Оба мальчика были высокие. 4. Она видела, как он выходил из дома с чемоданом в каждой руке. 5. Оба ехали молча или обсуждали такие вещи, которые не интересовали ни того ни другого. 6. Когда она наклонила голову, ее темные волосы упали по обе стороны лица. 7. «Нам всем нужно продвигаться вперед», — сказал экскурсовод. 8. Она посмотрела вокруг и увидела, что по обеим сторонам дороги были прекрасные современные высокие дома. 9. Они оба стояли неподвижно. 10. Она спросила Джона и Джека, где они так долго были. Ни тот ни другой ничего не ответили. 11. «Они все для меня одинаковы», — сказал Филипп. 12. Они оба могут остаться здесь. 13. Оба мальчика тяжело дышали. 14. «Почему вы все спустились вниз?» — спросил мой отец. 15. Мы оба засмеялись и расстались друзьями. 16. «Бабушка, мы все здесь», — сказала Люси тихо. 17. «Вы боитесь темноты или собаки?» — «Я не боюсь ни того ни другого». 18. Надеюсь, что мы все будем выполнять свой долг. 19. Он разглядывал меня, а я разглядывала его, и ни тот ни другой ничего не говорили. 20. Мальчики с обеих сторон поддерживали пожилого человека, когда переходили улицу. 21. Они вдруг все перестали танцевать вальс. 22. Вы оба должны приехать к нам и провести у нас вечер. 23. «Вечер будет посвящен вопросам

и ответам», — сказал Ник. «Откровенно говоря, я не вижу нужды ни в том ни в другом», — сказала Анна. 24. Они оба вскоре ушли в кино. 25. «Я слышала, как вы оба пришли», — сказала мать. 26. Отец Джека учил его математике и латинскому языку, не зная ни того ни другого, а тетюшка учила его французскому и музыке.

Exercise 20. Insert *other* or *another* and the definite article where necessary.

1. Donald's wife brought in two big cups, holding one in each hand. One she gave to Daphne and ... to Donald. 2. Finally Jenny said, "Wouldn't anybody like some more coffee?" "I think my husband could use ... cup," said Naomi. 3. Alec whispered something from ... side of the table. 4. He spread the magazine flat on the floor, open so that its pages were on one side and its paper on ... 5. There was ... pause. 6. I cast a quick look back out the window. Three parachutes opened one after ..., in rapid succession. 7. From one piece of news he went to ..., keeping the paper well before his face. 8. He took ... puff on his cigarette. 9. Jimmie was taking a short holiday which he spent in going every night to the theatre in one town after ... 10. He threw his fist on the table and, frowning angrily, protruded one finger after ... 11. I will come in ... day to hear how they acquit themselves. 12. He entered the room and saw Mike and Marja sitting on the sofa. He looked first at one, then at ... 13. Robinson went out, returning presently for ... bowl of soup. 14. When it happens, there must be only two persons present beside myself. One is Mark Ruthen ... is a man whom I expect here only very shortly. 15. Her two sons were playing in the garden. Ann turned her eyes from one to ...

Exercise 21. Insert *some* or *any*.

1. We certainly don't want ... trouble. 2. There is ... soup in the pan. You may eat it. 3. But there aren't ... trains until morning. 4. Go up, dear, and tell her we're all in here, with ... tea, and ask her to come down. 5. Why do you always ask if there's ... news? 6. His mother bought ... notebooks for him. 7. She looked everywhere for matches but could not find ... 8. "Have you ... money?" — "Yes." — "Loan me ..."

9. "He wants ... more gruel, Jane." — "Give him" 10. Ann is much younger than ... other girls in her class.

Exercise 22. Insert *some, any* or their compounds.

a) 1. When I needed help, he didn't ask ... questions. 2. Does ... actually have the luxury of doing exactly what he wants to do? 3. I know ... about them. 4. What exactly he was going to do neither he nor ... else quite knew. 5. Is there ... you want there, Robin? 6. I recalled, too, there had been ... talk between Tom Wells and me. 7. Did you see ... that would be of ... use to me? 8. Even in that sad weather there was ... restful about the green fields that stretched to the horizon. 9. Have you ... cheese? 10. I did not want to speak to ... I knew at Barford. 11. There'll be ... coffee in a minute. 12. Don't you remember ... about this afternoon?

b) 1. If ... man wants to raise a beard, let him. 2. There was a strange gleam in his eyes as if ... amused him greatly. 3. I must get ... clothes, ... really nice ones. 4. Will you have ... tea or coffee? 5. If there's ... you want, let me know. 6. I didn't realize there was ... here. 7. Do you want to eat ... ? 8. If you had ... sense of decency, if you had ... gratitude, you wouldn't dream of going. 9. "I want ... place that is better than mine," said Hope. 10. If you mock me I will hit you, and if you tell ... I will never forgive you. 11. He looked at her curiously as if to find in her face ... that he had previously overlooked. 12. You may have ... tea without milk because there isn't ... at home. 13. Had I ... more to say before he sent the letter? 14. There wasn't ... point in beating around the bush, David decided. 15. It's a subject you ought to know ... about. 16. I shall be very much surprised if ... is wrong. 17. Keep in touch if there's ... news. 18. Now, can you tell me ... about your children? 19. He knows a great deal more than ... of us about these machines. 20. If ... asked my reason for existence, what should I tell them?

Exercise 23. Insert *no, none* or their compounds.

1. ... answered her, as she addressed ... in particular. 2. There are ... pears on the tree. 3. Everybody liked him ... was afraid of him. 4. It was cold outside the house and he looked up and down for a taxi but there was ... in sight.

5. I had turned to him for support, and we had ... to say to each other. 6. ... believed him. 7. The morning ticked on, midday, the early afternoon, ... of us had spoken of eating. 8. ... tells me anything. 9. Jack and Simon pretended to notice 10. You told ... anything about their trip to the Far East. 11. I have ... time to go to the cinema with you. 12. ... of those attitudes were stated at this meeting. 13. That afternoon, at least, Martin was answerable to 14. There is ... bread and ... forks on the table. 15. Nicola said

Exercise 24. Translate into English. Pay attention to the use of the pronouns *some, any, no, none* and their compounds.

1. Она решила никого не приглашать к себе до приезда мужа. 2. На столе есть масло? — Да, есть. 3. Не о чем сожалеть, Том. 4. Если вам нечего делать, идите гулять. 5. Вы хотите масла? — С удовольствием, спасибо. 6. Если у них и было что сказать, они не говорили. 7. Дайте мне, пожалуйста, молока. 8. У вас есть друзья в Екатеринбурге? — Есть. 9. Вы хотите холодного кофе? — Нет, не хочу. 10. Мы никого не знали на этом вечере. 11. Бабушка пыталась рассказать нам что-то приятное. 12. Никто не разговаривал. Все внимательно слушали лектора. 13. Можно мне взять бумаги? — Возьмите, пожалуйста. 14. Она ничего не видела, так как в комнате было темно. 15. Я зайду к вам, если мне что-нибудь понадобится. 16. Никто из детей еще не встал. 17. Сегодня в вашем диктанте нет ошибок. 18. Неужели вам не предложили прочесть некоторые интересные статьи в этом журнале? 19. Я буду у себя в кабинете, если вам что-то понадобится. 20. Папа, ты освободился? Я хочу тебе что-то сказать. 21. Вам удалось найти какие-нибудь статьи по этому вопросу? 22. Мы что-нибудь можем для вас сделать? 23. Ни один корреспондент не писал об этом. 24. Можно я угощу вас бананами? — Спасибо, я не хочу. 25. Вы думаете, нам нужно сказать ей что-нибудь об экспедиции?

Exercise 25. Supply the appropriate pronoun out of those given in brackets.

1. There was (much, many) wood in the stream. 2. In the last twenty-four hours too (little, many) things had happened. 3. Philip had (few, little) friends. 4. There was (little, many)

time to think. 5. Martin spent so (much, many) time in the hospital. 6. In the next (few, little) days Irene felt a change. 7. There were (few, little) people in the square, and I did not notice the faces as I hurried past. 8. I noticed (little, few) emotion in his voice — maybe he was past it, I thought. 9. He had very (little, many) money, barely sixteen hundred pounds, and it would be necessary for him to practice the severest economy. 10. It was a hot day and there were (many, much) flies in the room. 11. Yellow gleams of lamplight showed in the stores and houses which remained in the village, but they were (little, few). 12. There were (much, many) big hotels that were closed but most of the shops were open. 13. How (much, many) is the clock fast now? 14. (few, little) of the eighty thousand passengers who flew in and out each day were aware of how inadequate the runway system had become.

Exercise 26. Define the meaning and function of the pronoun one.

1. One must be sure of one's ground. 2. "Which is Avicé, the young one or the old one?" — "The young one." 3. One morning he received a long letter from Thorpe Athelney. 4. Then I suppose he addresses his letters to the people who are to read them. And this one is addressed to Isabel. 5. "It shows that one should be careful what one says," said Faith lightly. 6. Two more buses came up and pulled in behind the first one. 7. He has interviewed my friends — the ones I have now and the ones who have been with me in former years. 8. When one knows what others suffer one's ashamed. 9. That was why, one autumn afternoon, he sent word that he would like a "little talk" with Hector Rose and me. 10. "Did Father have an ordinary illness like an English one?" said Gavin. 11. I know we're not religious people, we're actors, and after eight performances a week one wants one's Sundays to oneself. 12. "Have you little ones finished your dessert?" said Eleanor.

ADVERB

Exercise 1. Form the adverbs from the following adjectives by adding suffix -
ly:

shaky, guilty, rosy, greedy, clumsy, busy, pretty, noisy, hasty, heavy, uneasy, steady, happy, angry, gay, shy, dry, complete, nervous, clever, quiet, genuine, absolute, peaceable, noticeable, real, sympathetic, appreciative, strange, beautiful, free, uncomfortable, brave, polite, enthusiastic, immense, cheerful, careful, wonderful.

Exercise 2. Give the degrees of comparison of the following adverbs:

heavily, hard, gaily, fast, cheerfully, politely, late, shyly, far, dryly, peaceably, happily.

Exercise 3. Use the correct form of the adverbs in brackets.

1. I suppose actions speak (loud) than words. 2. She spoke very (sadly) and (slowly). 3. His heart leaped as he saw himself running, running, (fast) than any of the other boys. 4. They went (slowly) than Ralph had bargained for. 5. Piggy spoke (softly) to Ralph than his sister. 6. Godfrey drove (carefully) than usual. 7. Each time the words were screamed (loudly) than before. 8. He looked at her (narrowly) than usual. 9. How long have you been here? A child of five after two lessons would draw (well) than you do. 10. Mr and Mrs Carey were (frankly) shocked at Philip's idea of being an artist.

Exercise 4. State whether the italicized words are adjectives or adverbs.

1. He came *close* to Godfrey and breathed into his waistcoat. 2. He was also his *closest* companion and his *closest*

friend. 3. Our sympathy had always been *close*, and was growing *closer* as we grew older. 4. He had worked very *hard*, it would be too cruel if all that industry were futile. 5. I don't want to be *too hard* on you. 6. His hair was *straight* and *long*. 7. He sat up *straight* in his chair, and asked what I wanted to see him about. 8. Could you show me the *nearest* way to the Red Square? 9. She turned full on me, when I was sitting *near* the window with my back to the sunlight. 10. First I considered myself to be standing *high* on a very *high* mountain with a *straight wide* mouth; and I pulled my mouth *straight* and *wide*, I made my eyes *close* down at the *far* corners, widening at the inner corners. 11. Would you mind telling me how *long* you're staying up here? 12. It's simply that I find these *long* silences intolerable. 13. I went *further* out in the lake to pass it. The lake was much *narrower* now. 14. He did not ask any *further* questions. 15. I do think you might have caught an *earlier* train from Cambridge. 16. You might have come a little bit *earlier*. 17. I'm a *better* singer than he now. 18. I think we should work far *better* to get rid of such mistakes. 19. I'm afraid I can't walk very *fast*. 20. My watch is ten minutes *fast*.

Exercise 5. Choose the correct word in brackets.

1. The birds were flying (high, highly) and low. 2. He was (high, highly) intelligent. 3. He had found out that Sawbridge's family had lived (close, closely) to mine. 4. Philip, smoking a cheap cigar, observed Clutton (close, closely). 5. Meanwhile Martin's own reward was coming (near, nearly). 6. We were (near, nearly) smashed up on the shore several times. 7. I'm sure you know how (deep, deeply) I sympathize with you. 8. With her beautiful expressive eyes she looked (deep, deeply) into his. 9. During his last year at St Luke's Philip had to work (hard, hardly). 10. I need (hard, hardly) say that I agree with you. 11. Suddenly she stopped (short, shortly), and disengaged herself from her companion. 12. He was joined (short, shortly) by a stewardess. 13. They stick you with everything if you don't look (sharp, sharply). 14. He looked at her (sharp, sharply). 15. "Open your eyes (wide, widely)," he ordered gently and examined

each eye in turn in the bright pencil of light. 16. This word is (wide, widely) used in spoken English. 17. The officer leaned down and looked (close, closely) at Ralph. 18. There were three desks, one with an electric typewriter, and all with papers, books, and files piled (high, highly). 19. His heart beat so that he could (hard, hardly) breathe. 20. He drank long and (deep, deeply). 21. He had an eye for colour which was more (high, highly) trained than that of anyone in the department. 22. Ralph said nothing more, but waited while the procession came (near, nearly). 23. He was (deep, deeply) moved. 24. She suddenly felt that he was (wide, widely) awake. 25. The doctor answered him (short, shortly).

Exercise 6. Translate the adverbs in brackets into English.

1. We shan't get out of the muddle we're in except by thinking (усиленно) and realistically. 2. He could (едва) speak. 3. Piggy took off his glasses, (глубоко) troubled. 4. The geologists dug too (глубоко) to find oil. 5. The boy came (близко) and peered down at Ralph, screwing up his face as he did so. 6. Holly, followed (внимательно) by her elderly French governess, came rushing toward them from under the oak tree. 7. The lantern held (высоко) was in his left hand. 8. He had thought (высоко) of Desert. 9. He will be here at ten (ровно). 10. He spoke (резко) to the children, and told them to go in to their tea. 11. He lives (близко) the Institute. 12. She put her arm round my shoulders and (почти) wept over me. 13. Jon's eyes opened (широко). 14. It is (широко) known that John is the best sportsman in our town. 15. It is (весьма) probable that they are in the Crimea now. 16. The trickle of smoke sketched a chalky line up the solid blue of the sky, wavered (высоко) up and faded. 17. But we really got a beast, though I can't (едва) believe it, we'll need to stay (близко) to the platform. 18. I decided he must be lying flat, and set off along the beach, examining the base of the cliffs very (тщательно). 19. He always came away (глубоко) depressed. 20. "Never mind my reason!" said Soames (вскоре). 21. You have stated that the agreement which he has so unfortunately cut (внезапно) with his own hand was for a period of five years.

Exercise 7. Translate into English.

1. Он поскользнулся и чуть не упал. 2. Он оставил собаку около дома. 3. Тропинка круто поворачивала к деревне. 4. Он пристально смотрел на Елену, которая сидела напротив него. 5. Дверь была широко открыта, и они вошли не позвонив. 6. «Джейн спит, и я не хочу, чтобы ее беспокоили», — сказал Том резко. 7. «Извините», — сказала Элиза, внезапно остановившись. 8. Он пришел домой вскоре после того, как мы ушли. 9. Вы так сильно изменились, что я едва вас узнала. 10. Джон порезал большой палец и сильно плакал, когда мать вошла в детскую. 11. Она дышала медленно и глубоко после соревнования. 12. Тихие воды глубоки. 13. Во время беседы он внимательно ее рассматривал. 14. Маленький Джон спустился вниз и сел на нижнюю ступеньку. Белла подошла вплотную и стала его рассматривать. 15. Том следовал тут же за сестрой. 16. В течение двух или трех дней доктор внимательно следил за Филиппом. 17. Мы можем жить с высоко поднятыми головами и смотреть всему миру в лицо. 18. Нас считали высокообразованными людьми. 19. Когда Джек выступал, он сильно жестикулировал руками. 20. Чем скорее вы прочтете книгу, тем лучше. 21. Чем больше он думал о своем путешествии, тем больше оно ему нравилось.

VERB

Tense

Exercise 1. Comment on the use of Present Indefinite and the Present Continuous.

1. I never talk when I am working, and never listen either. 2. I hope that by the time she gets into the public school system, things will be different. 3. Can't you see he is laughing at you? 4. I suppose it sometimes happens that letters arrive for people when in actual fact no one of that name is staying here. 5. Do you know where Mary is? — I expect she is talking to Mother. 6. "Oh, mummy! The coffee is boiling over!" 7. If anyone comes to the door I'll go and let them in. 8. I'm staying right here until she is out of trouble. 9. He's going back to America. 10. I can easily look the article through while you are having your bath. 11. Isn't mother coming? — No. She is not feeling well. 12. "So it all passes," he was thinking, "passes and begins again." 13. She is always telling me that I should have some serious purpose in life. 14. What are you listening to? — It seems to me I hear a strange noise outside. 15. You are always dozing when there is something unpleasant to face. 16. Can we go over to Ann's today, Mummy? — You can, on your like, if you keep to the side of the lane and are very careful.

Exercise 2. Use the Present Indefinite or the Present Continuous instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. I (to look) for Tommy Flynn. Have you seen him? 2. You often (not to see) her now, do you? 3. You (to joke) Philip?—

No, Father, I (not to joke). 4. "You (to stay) in London?" she asked as I was going. "I (to wonder) if you'd like to come to a little party I (to give) next week." 5. How's Jon? — He (to grow) peaches in North Caroline. 6. I am certain to know all about it when I (to get his letter). 7. Why you (to wear) your new clothes, those in which you are to travel tomorrow? 8. Why, my dear boy, how stout you (to get)! 9. On his way he generally (to meet) many children who (to go) to school. 10. Will they tell me who he (to be) if I (to go) down to them? 11. I (to act) in this case solely in your interest. 12. The old saying came back to him: "A man's fate (to lie) in his own heart." 13. His dog always (to attack) strangers!

Exercise 3. Comment on the use of the Present Perfect. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. How long have you been an officer, Ettore? 2. He's poisoned your mind against me ever since you were old enough to listen. 3. I shall never love anyone as I have loved you. 4. You've never had a chance to meet decent people here. 5. You've done more than stay young: you've stayed a child. 6. I have been uneasy all the afternoon about what they must think of us. 7. And since you've been here, everything has certainly been worse than it's ever been. 8. How many times in these past few months I've thought of the evenings we used to spend here in this room. 9. I've been with Mr Gallagher for four years now and a better gentleman you wouldn't find. 10. I've put a camp-bed in your room. Or you could have the other room, only it's rather cold. 11. I haven't closed my eyes for forty-eight hours. 12. I've always hated this town and everyone in it. 13. I've watched her doing it day after day. 14. You have never been absent from my thoughts for a moment.

Exercise 4. Comment on the use of the Present Perfect Continuous. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. What do you think he's been doing? 2. I have been wishing to speak to you ever since you returned. 3. Sophie's been cleaning all day, and I've been cooking! 4. You have been calling out in your sleep. 5. Who has been bearing false tales to him? 6. "I've been wanting to see you, Collin,"

she said. 7. How long has she been going on like this? 8. That's what I've been trying to do for you. I've been working on the problem. 9. I want you to understand that everything he has just been saying to you is pure imagination. 10. Oh, Michael, we've been seeking for you for hours. 11. "How are you, Mr Bosinney?" he said holding out his hand. "You've been spending money pretty freely here I should say." 12. You've been working too hard. You are off your balance. 13. And here's the water you've been drinking. 14. I have been thinking of your decision since we parted. 15. I sometimes think that Eric's got consumption. He's been complaining of pains in his chest and head.

Exercise 5. Use the Present Perfect or the Present Perfect Continuous instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. I (to try) all the afternoon to get a minute alone with you. 2. "I don't suppose you (to have) much to eat all day," said my mother. 3. You (to wait) long? — Yes, I (to stand) here for more than half an hour. 4. You (to see) Beatrice lately? 5. No one ever (to have) a better son than our Herbert. 6. I'm afraid, I (to promise) to wait for Mr and Mrs Watkins. 7. I (to try) to get a good job for many months now. 8. You haven't a nerve in you. You never (to have). 9. He (to give) Sophie dancing lessons or pretending to? 10. I (to think) about nothing else since then. 11. He (to amuse) himself that way all his life. 12. "I (not to be) out," she said. "I (to stay) here, all by myself." 13. I (to look) forward to it all the week. 14. What you (to do) to yourself since I (to be) away? 15. You (to nag) me long enough about having a holiday. 16. I just (to wash) my hair and I (to try) to dry it by the radiator. 17. I'll make you a cup of tea. I (to long) for one myself, but I (to be) too lazy to have one on my own. 18. She (to nurse) the hardest cases for four years.

Exercise 6. Use the required present tense instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. I (to be) here too long. I (to want) to get away. 2. What he (to do) for a living? — He (to sing) and (to play) the guitar. — He (to play) for his friends or just for money? — I (not to know). — He (to have) a commercial concert soon? — Yes, on

Saturday. 3. Where you (to be), Tommy? Look at your face! You're a sight! — Mummy, you always (to grumble)! 4. Everybody (to be) here? — No, Mr Black (not to come) yet. I (to think) he (not to return) from abroad yet. He (to arrive) on Saturday. 5. The old man (to sit) in front of the fire since dinner-time. 6. I (not to have) a holiday for two years. 7. "Gentlemen," Andrew said. "I just (to wait) for a good position — such as this — to get married." 8. We (to take) two rooms in Dabney Street and we (to furnish) them now. 9. "What you (to write) to him about?" she asked looking over my shoulder. 10. What you (to tell) me (to be) quite a romance. 11. For years you (to say) you (to be) trapped out, but you always (to get through). 12. I (to read) the book you (to hold). 13. You always (to forget) something! 14. I (to grow) too fat. 15. Something (to worry) me all day! 16. All I (to know) is that somebody (to stick) pins into my wax image for years.

Exercise 7. Translate the sentences into English using the Present Indefinite, the Present Continuous, the Present Perfect or the Present Perfect Continuous.

1. Ты понимаешь, что ты наделал? — Ничего особенного. Все так поступают в подобных случаях. 2. Всегда она со всеми ссорится! Я уверена, что по соседству нет ни одного человека, с кем бы она хоть раз не поссорилась. 3. Где же ты был все это время? Мы искали тебя повсюду. 4. О чем ты думаешь, Изабелла? — Так, ни о чем. 5. Я рад сообщить вам, доктор Мэнсон, что большинством голосов комитет решил остановить свой выбор на вас. 6. А где они сейчас? Ты с ними переписываешься? — Да, конечно. Но что-то давно от них не было писем. 7. Ты весь день на ногах! Пора и отдохнуть. 8. Мы работаем вместе уже пятнадцать лет и привыкли понимать друг друга. 9. Я слышал, вы многого добились в жизни. 10. Тони, она плачет. Ну, успокой ее, скажи ей что-нибудь. 11. Я давно собиралась зайти к вам, да все как-то не было времени. 12. Что вы здесь делаете? Разве вы не знаете, что здесь опасно оставаться во время работы реактора? 13. Вы дайте мне понять, что все эти долгие месяцы я напрасно тратил время? 14. Ты не слушаешь, что я говорю. Что с тобой случилось? 15. Хозяин гостиницы предупредил меня, что, если моей жене

не станет лучше, нам придется съехать. 16. «Я не могу выставить эту картину, — сказал художник. — Я вложил в нее слишком много своей души».

Exercise 8. Use the Past Indefinite instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. Mrs Sunbury (to cut) the cake and (to put) a large piece on Betty's plate. 2. He (to look) at her for a moment with surprise. 3. Eric (to switch on) the wireless and (to sit down) beside it. 4. She (not to smile) when she (to see) him. 5. On the way home she usually (to buy) a slice of honeycake at the baker's. It (to be) her Sunday treat. 6. Three o'clock (to strike), and four, and the half hour (to ring), but Dorian Gray (not to stir). 7. When he (to arrive) he (to find) the patient to be a small boy of nine years of age. 8. A little before nine o'clock I (to descend) to the ground floor. 9. When Eddy (to leave) in the morning he (to take) her photograph with him. 10. The girls (to sit) side by side at their desks, they (to lunch) together every noon, together they (to set out) for home at the end of the day's work. 11. A quarter of an hour later he (to hear) voices. 12. On the fifteenth of October Andrew (to set out) alone for London. 13. Bart's train (to get) into Central about half past five, and he (to go) to the servicemen's hostel and (to have) a bath and a sleep. 14. The stranger (to climb) into his car and (to drive away), and when he (to notice) later that his speedometer (to indicate) seventy-five, he (to laugh) at himself but (not to slow down). 15. Clapper (to stare) at the photograph without a change of expression for at least half a minute.

Exercise 9. Translate the sentences using the Present Perfect or the Past Indefinite.

1. Это самый лучший вратарь, который когда-либо играл в этой команде. 2. Ты вернулся позавчера, не правда ли? 3. Вы давно играете на сцене, мисс? Простите, я забыла ваше имя. 4. Она подняла трубку и набрала номер телефона Алисы. 5. Простите, меня задержали. Сегодня у нас в аэропорту возник целый ряд непредвиденных проблем. 6. «А мы там не обедали», — в один голос сказали мальчики. 7. Вы давно в чине капитана? — Уже три года. Скоро я буду майором. 8. Ты видела его во время репетиции?

9. Когда они уехали? — Точно не знаю. Меня не было дома. 10. «Ведь вы ей еще ничего не говорили?» — резко спросил Димирест. 11. «Сколько времени вы там оставались?» — «С полчаса». — «Вас кто-нибудь видел там?» — «Не думаю». 12. Я вам так благодарна за все, что вы для меня сделали. 13. Ну, как вам понравились ваши новые ученики? — О, они очень смышленные, но у них сменилось так много учителей, что они совсем разучились работать.

Exercise 10. Use the Present Perfect or the Past Indefinite instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. You (to behave) like this ever since I first (to come) here. 2. It (to happen) when I (to be out). 3. She just (to remind) me that we (to be) at school together. 4. I never (to have) the slightest desire to be an actress. 5. I (to meet) Tom this morning at the station. 6. I'm very sorry, Doctor, but Doctor Griffiths (to go) to Swansea on important business. 7. She (to finish) cleaning the bathroom, then she (to begin) peeling potatoes. 8. I (to see) her name in the papers rather often of late. 9. They (to leave) just a week ago today. 10. Most of the children here (to have) measles already. 11. They (to talk) much that evening. 12. "I (to do) something," he (to think). "Oh, I (to do) something real at last." 13. The bell (to ring) repeatedly, but they (not to answer) it, and presently it (to stop). 14. You can't see Herb. He (to be out). — No, he (not to be). I (to watch) him go in with his dad and he (not to come out) yet. 15. She (to lift) her bag from the sideboard and (to take out) a two-shilling piece. 16. "Good morning, Mrs Watt," she said. "Eric (to tell) you what to do?" 17. I (to love) you since I (to see) you walk into that classroom. 18. I don't think I (to be out) more than a couple of minutes. 19. The thing is that I (to come) to have a talk. 20. I'm her sister, and we (to have) only each other since Dad (to die).

Exercise 11. Comment on the use of the Past Continuous.

1. Around us people were talking German, Italian and English. 2. Robert was talking to some of the other guests on the terrace when Hardy came in. 3. Michael was continually looking at his watch. 4. He wasn't staying in the house,

was he? — No, but he was dining there that evening. 5. All night long the stars were glittering. 6. Lizzie was busily eating and didn't raise her head. 7. She was always saying that only Belinda knew how to treat men. 8. I saw Irene yesterday at the Stores; she and Mr Bosinney were having a nice little chat in the Groceries. 9. A few minutes later Dixon was hurrying through the streets to his bus stop. 10. They moved across the room, which was starting to fill up, to a vacant corner. 11. She was trying to open her bag as she walked by Annabel's side along the corridor, talking. Her hands were trembling. 12. He drank some of the wine and ate several chunks of bread while he was waiting for his dinner to come up. 13. Now I'll be able to get my own back on you, you were always chipping me about the Grammar School. 14. The house was humming with activity. The family was preparing for a party. 15. "Size," said Mrs Stubbs. "Give me size." That was what my poor dear husband was always saying. He couldn't stand anything small.

Exercise 12. Use the Past Indefinite or the Past Continuous instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. She (to go) to the back door, and as she (to raise) her hand to knock, the young man (to open) the door suddenly. 2. While the eggs (to boil) I (to go out) into the hall and (to phone) Jo. 3. He (to begin) to walk fast down the hedge; he couldn't see where he (to go). 4. She (to invite) him to the party she (to give) on Saturday. 5. He (to pause). They all (to look) at him now, interested. 6. She (to have) the satisfaction of seeing that Betty (to get) more and more ill at ease. 7. I (to wash), (to brush) my hair and we (to start). 8. It (to rain) hard, and she (to run) for a taxi. 9. Near her a small boy (to play) silently. 10. She (to look up) to see if we (to listen). 11. Next day, when the car (to come) we (to vanish) into the bush. 12. And all the while she (to think) how to get the money from Christie. 13. For the first time he (to notice) Heidi (to wear) a new dress: a simple affair of deep blue. 14. Lizzi (to eat) busily and (not to raise) her head. 15. It so (to happen) that she (to dine) that very evening at Timothy's. 16. Mrs Pimley (to come) into the drawing-room where we all (to sit) reading the papers after breakfast.

Exercise 13. Translate the sentences using the Past Indefinite or the Past Continuous.

1. Ты не можешь припомнить, что ты делал в то время?
2. Я разделась и пошла на кухню, где она жарила рыбу.
3. Я всегда раньше принимала эти таблетки от головной боли.
4. Когда мы вышли из кино, все еще шел сильный снег.
5. Он сказал что-то, потом замолчал, затем снова заговорил.
6. Уже смеркалось. Мы боялись, что они вообще не придут.
7. Голоса их были слышны, но нельзя было разобрать, о чем они говорят.
8. В половине седьмого аэропорт все еще был открыт, но все его службы работали с огромным напряжением.
9. Я прожил в Палермо всего два месяца, а потом переехал сюда.
10. У нее было такое ощущение, что надвигается какая-то беда.
11. Она что-то прилежно писала и даже не подняла головы, когда я вошел.
12. Старушка постоянно говорила о своих болезнях, и пассажиры старались не вступать с ней в разговор.
13. Он работал с утра до ночи, так ему хотелось поскорее накопить нужную сумму и уехать отсюда навсегда.
14. Все время, пока Джон рассказывал свою историю, она пристально смотрела на него. Она пыталась понять, что он за человек.

Exercise 14. Comment on the use of the Past Perfect.

1. He had already learnt that when he wanted anything it was better to ask his mother first.
2. It had long been physically impossible for Swithin to start, his fist came down on the table.
3. Talking to him was very easy; just like talking to someone you had known all your life.
4. The other children who had grown up with him were still the same.
5. Hardly had she sat down when a very stout gentleman flopped into the chair opposite hers.
6. George made no answer, and we found that he had been asleep for some time.
7. We knew that as a girl she had lived in the country.
8. He couldn't meet me. He hadn't been well for a few weeks.
9. Denry had fallen ill and Andrew was working for him.
10. I met Strickland before I had been a fortnight in Paris.
11. Old Jolyon saw Irene where he had seen her the first time, on the log.
12. Paying for what he had not eaten he left the café.
13. The occasion wasn't nearly as bad as I had feared.
14. The doctor examined Jan's throat. "Nothing wrong there."

He had attended her before, and it had always been the same; whenever he came into the room, his brisk, easy manner had given her comfort.

Exercise 15. Use the Past Indefinite or the Past Perfect instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. Suddenly he (to grit) his teeth in angry exasperation. Not only he (to omit) to leave his card; he (to forget) to tell them who he (to be). 2. It (to be) perfectly true that he never (to take) the slightest interest in his clothes, a suit off the peg always (to serve) him excellently, (to cover) him, (to keep) him warm without elegance. 3. It (to be) nine o'clock and we (to come) to her room two hours before, as we (to do) often on those winter evenings. 4. At once Helen (to smile) at me; yet I (to see) that it (to be) an effort for her to clear her mind of what (to go) before. 5. Gideon (to wake) early that morning possibly because the ringing of the fire alarm (to be) in his mind most of the night. 6. He (to graduate) from Queen's College before he (to take) his master's degree at Christ Church, Oxford. 7. "What he (to say)? Tell us! Tell us!" He (to tell) them what he (to say) and what the rector (to say) and, when he (to tell) them, all the fellows (to fling) their caps and (to cry): "Hurroo!" 8. When he (to come back) to his seat his manner (to change). He (to be) gentle and kindly. 9. He (to see) he (to be) already further out than he (to hope) to be at this hour. 10. By the time Fenella (to take off) her coat and skirt and (to put on) her flannel dressing-gown, grandma (to be) quite ready. 11. No sooner we (to put down) our glasses than the waiter (to refill) them. 12. Inquiring for her at tea-time Soames (to learn) that Fleur (to be out) in the car since two.

Exercise 16. Comment on the use of the Past Perfect Continuous.

1. She had been dreaming — a bad dream — though she couldn't remember the details of it. 2. Betty wasn't such a fool as not to see that Mrs Sunbury had been doing all she could to make her uncomfortable. 3. I wondered how long I'd been standing there, my hand on the phone. 4. The others had been talking a few moments when he raised his head. 5. One of the men spoke first and said the very things that

Michael had been saying for so long. 6. The women came from under the trees where they had been waiting. 7. Archie couldn't have said how long he had been sitting in the deep armchair near the window. 8. The complaints she had been turning over in her mind to make to him, died on her tongue. 9. They'd been doing a steady fifty ever since they had got out of Sydney, and now the speedometer was rocketing around sixty. 10. Suddenly when he had been working six months his wife's aunt in Bridlington took ill and wrote asking her to come.

Exercise 17. Use the required past tense instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. Fleur (to put) her baby back in its nest, and (to stare) straight before her. 2. But when the time (to come) to set out, my friend (not to feel) well. He (to think) he (to stay) too long in the water. 3. Miss Marple (to say) she (to hear) that Gladys (to leave). 4. The guests (to stand) by the window, waiting for the party to begin, while some of them (to go) to other parts of the flat. 5. Making sure that the waiter (not to look) over his shoulder, Soames, who (to bring) the book in with him, (to push) it over. 6. I (to explain) to the gentlemen that you (to be) in bed for several days with a high fever. 7. At 6.30 that Friday afternoon the Lincoln International Airport still (to work), though with difficulty. A snow storm (to rage) for three days and now trouble spots (to begin) to appear. 8. Hardly he (to enter) the room when he (to switch on) the TV set. 9. The bell (to stop) ringing and they (to guess) that Betty (to go away). 10. Just as we (to leave) the phone (to ring). 11. I (to wonder) if a friend of mine (to stay) here lately. 12. He (cannot) bear the thought that during the whole time Clare (to regard) him with her critical eye. 13. At the end of the table Mike (to tell) his hostess of the adventures in a tour from which he just (to return). 14. I (to sit) on the stage all alone with my notes, sipping coffee. 15. Although she (to seem) to be listening to Doreen, only half of her mind (to hear) what she (to say), the other half (to check), (to plan) and (to arrange) to make certain she (to have) everything for the ten days she would be away. 16. Doreen (to look up) from her nail she (to manicure) to see if her words (to have) any effect.

Exercise 18. Translate the sentences using the Past Indefinite, the Past Continuous, the Past Perfect or the Past Perfect Continuous.

1. После того как доктор ушел, она еще долго сидела у кровати, прислушиваясь к хриплому дыханию девочки. 2. За стеной кто-то смеялся. Смех был такой веселый и заразительный, какого она давно не слышала. 3. Денни работал у себя в кабинете до восьми часов. Потом они вдвоем поужинали и почти до полуночи говорили о своих планах на будущее. Спать легли очень поздно. 4. Джейн несколько секунд внимательно его разглядывала, когда он вдруг поднял глаза и встретился с ней взглядом. 5. К счастью, он не заметил ее красных глаз и не догадался, что она плакала. 6. Он позвонил четверть часа тому назад и сказал, что выезжает. 7. Не успела она добежать до станции метро, как хлынул дождь. 8. Сомс пересек лужайку, постоял на тропинке, ведущей к реке, повернул обратно, не сознавая, куда он идет. 9. Люси, которая жила в соседнем доме и которая осталась с детьми, когда Бетси уехала, сидела в гостиной и что-то шила. 10. К пяти часам он нанес все необходимые визиты и мог, наконец, вздохнуть спокойно. 11. Пока они с Фредди обсуждали, как обставить квартиру, вошла миссис Лоуренс. Она тоже хотела принять участие в обсуждении.

Exercise 19. Use the required past tense instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. He (to look up) from the card he (to study). 2. It (not to be) until Doreen actually (to leave) that Jan (to realize) just how much she (to depend) on her. 3. Bart (to sleep) heavily, but Jan (to lie) sleepless in spite of the sedative he (to give) her. 4. All her anger (to go), the last traces of hysteria (to disappear). Her mind (to be) clear as it (not to be) clear in many weeks. 5. The New Year (to bring) them luck, she (to think). 6. He (to feel) like a man who (to come) out of a fog-filled tunnel where he (to grope) blindly for months. 7. He (to realize) that he (not to hear) her laugh like that since before her illness. 8. Mrs Carlton (to switch on) the light above her bed and now (to lie) back against her pillow with a thermometer between her lips. 9. "I must

be going." He (to lie), and she (to know) he (to lie). 10. They (to walk) slowly to the seat on which she and Bart (to sit) on the first day she (to come) to Pine Ridge and (to sit) there in silence. 11. They (to sit) for a long time over their coffee and the cat (to stretch) himself on Bart's knee and (to purr). 12. When he (to enter) the room and (to see) Jan leaning forward to welcome him he (to feel) he never (to be away) from her. 13. Bart (to open) his mouth to protest that he (to hear) it (to take) months to get into a public sanatorium but Dr Laide (to go on) quickly before he (can) speak. 14. The air of the flat (to be) heavy and stale as it always (to be), but she (to breathe) it with satisfaction. 15. She (to be) home and free, and today the hyacinth Bart (to bring) to her (to break) the first bud.

Exercise 20. Use the Present Indefinite or the Future Indefinite instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. I (not to mention) it unless he (to do). 2. You go home and if we (to see) Tommy Flynn we (to tell) him. 3. Within a week you (to agree) with me. 4. Of course it can't last, but when it (to come) to an end it (to be) a wonderful experience for him. It really (to make) a man of him. 5. He (to dance) attendance upon her as long as she (to let) him. 6. I (not to work) any more today; I (to stay) with you. 7. I (not to want) Eliza to have the shock of your news until she (to make) it up with these two gentlemen. 8. He (to let) Mrs Rodd go free tonight — on condition that we all (to leave) tomorrow. 9. If you (not to intend) to go in for the whole day you'd better let me know now and I (to ring up) when I (to get) to work and tell them you (to be) sick. 10. You just stay there until I (to tell) you, my girl, and I (to clean up) the house. 11. If you (to wait) ten minutes, I (to run) both of us round in the car. 12. When you (to be up) in the sanatorium it (not to seem) so bad, I (to be) sure. 13. Now I (to tell) you a secret if you (to promise) not to tell anyone. 14. It (not to be) so long till we (to be) together and then it (not to be) so hard for him. 15. Once I (to get) her into one of those sanatoria, you (to have) no expenses at all, but until there (to be) a vacancy I can't get her in.

Exercise 21. Comment on the use of the Future Continuous and the Future Perfect.

a) 1. A year from now I'll be earning more than a dozen men in the Railway Mail. You wait and see. 2. I shall be ringing up to Miguel and asking him to explain everything. 3. "The birds will be going South in a couple of days," Mary said. 4. "I hope we'll be seeing you again," he said as he offered his hand. 5. Well, good-bye. I may be hearing from you later. Oh, by the way, when will the paragraph be appearing? 6. When you come back, look out for me. I'll be waiting to welcome you. 7. Carrie tells me you'll be going up to town in a few weeks to stay with them. 8. You won't be alone, Teresa! I'll always be coming to see you, he'll always be coming too! 9. After Bill goes I'll be sitting here all alone night after night. 10. "Are you sure that we won't be disturbing you?" she asked. 11. We'll be dropping in here to eat again and again. 12. You'll be getting married soon. Everything will be all right then.

b) 1. Call on me at about 7 o'clock. I am sure they will have left by then. 2. "Another month will make seven weeks," she said. "Seven weeks of what?" — "Seven weeks that I shan't have seen you." 3. I'm afraid he will have posted the letter by the time we come. We can't prevent it. 4. By the time you get free I shall have finished my work.

Exercise 22 Use the required future or present tense instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. I expect we (to see) a lot of each other. 2. I (to get) old and (to have) children by then. 3. In a minute I (to join) you, my friend. 4. She knows that if she (to come) she (to have) a chance of a happier and surer life than she has had. 5. You don't think it (to rain), do you? 6. In a week you (to drive) with this woman in the Park. She (to be) your constant guest, your dearest friend. 7. I (to start) out on my round by the time you (to go). 8. I (to think) of you day and night. 9. If you (to mention) her name again, I (to knock) you down. 10. You (to stay) in Rome long? 11. Why, we (to work) all night and (to finish) everything by midday tomorrow. 12. Bart and your mother (to come) to dinner. 13. I (to stink) American until I (to drop) dead. 14. Our people (to wait) at the emergency entrance. 15. Mum, I think we (to leave) for

Chicago sooner than we thought. We (to start) getting ready tomorrow morning.

Exercise 23. Translate the sentences into English.

1. Это случилось так давно, что я уже забыла об этом. 2. Стояла поздняя осень. Почти все листья уже опали, и последние птицы улетели на юг. 3. Едва только она начала говорить об этом, как неожиданно заплакала. 4. Сколько времени вы занимаетесь музыкой? 5. Прошло уже два месяца, как они приехали, но они никуда не ходят. 6. Она выключила свет и сидела в полной темноте. 7. Он спросил меня, когда я приду в следующий раз. 8. Почему вы так поздно вернулись из города? 9. Он уехал год тому назад и с тех пор не написал нам ни одного письма. 10. К 23 января мы уже сдадим все экзамены. 11. Мы спросили мальчиков, что они делают на улице в такой поздний час. 12. Телеграмма пришла десять минут спустя после того, как ты уехала. 13. Я все хочу поговорить с вами об этом. 14. Я слышала, что она заболела и находится в больнице. 15. Сколько времени его уже здесь нет? 16. Я подожду, пока он окончит свой рассказ, а потом попрошу его ответить на мой вопрос. Он давно волнует меня. 17. Нам сказали, что они приезжают послезавтра. 18. Она взглянула на часы. Было уже около пяти. Она прождала более получаса. 19. Вечно ты ко мне придираешься! 20. Где вы купили этот ковер? — Он здесь так давно, что я просто не помню. 21. Дети будут делать уроки. Пойдем на кухню. 22. Я уверена, вы забудете меня к тому времени. 23. Прошла уже неделя, как мы сюда приехали, а погода все время плохая. 24. Тучи собирались целый день, и наконец полил дождь. 25. Он сказал, что, если я буду следовать его советам, все будет в порядке. 26. О, я предвкушаю, как Джимми будет прыгать от радости, когда увидит тебя. 27. Не отъехали они и трех километров, как погода изменилась. 28. Когда вы были здесь в последний раз? 29. Сегодня мы сможем узнать результаты эксперимента, который проводился все эти недели. 30. Люди, которые не были в Москве много лет, с трудом узнают ее сейчас. 31. Ты видела его сегодня? — Да. Он сообщил мне плохие новости. 32. Джордж, который громко смеялся, вдруг замолчал.

Voice

Exercise 1. Comment on the forms of the Passive Voice. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. He was interrupted by the ringing of the telephone. 2. The dog's leg has undoubtedly been cut. 3. Finally his name was called and the boy was pushed forward to the bar. 4. One thing was evident, Julia couldn't know what was being said about her, and someone must tell her. 5. She saw that the bed had been changed, spread with fresh linen. 6. Hold your tongue and speak when you are spoken to. 7. Denis was overwhelmed by an emotion that was strange and new. 8. That small pencil sketch in the corner of the margin has been much admired. 9. He felt with satisfaction that he was being stared at. 10. She saw at once that nothing had been touched. 11. Two bags, which should have gone to Rome, were at this moment being loaded aboard a flight for Milwaukee. 12. What has been done this summer cannot have been done in vain.

Exercise 2. Put the following into the Passive Voice.

1. We shall finish the work not later than on Friday. 2. Somebody has invited her to the party. 3. People laughed at her when she said it. 4. I felt that somebody was watching me. 5. Did they give you all the necessary books? 6. The teacher explained a new rule to the students. 7. I showed the documents to the officer. 8. The director dictated a telegram to the secretary. 9. Have they told you everything? 10. They often refer to Professor Arakin's articles. 11. He didn't explain the traffic regulations to me. 12. They have organized a golf club here. 13. They are rehearsing a new play at the National Theatre. 14. We lost sight of the car when it turned round the corner. 15. They have been carrying out the work since August. 16. She announced to the workers that the experiment was dangerous. 17. Have you sent for the morning papers? 18. You are always finding fault with me! 19. Where will they build the new theatre? 20. Two young but experienced nurses assisted the doctor during the operation. 21. At last he realized that nobody would call upon him. 22. They took no notice of the boy. 23. Did the noise frighten you?

Exercise 3. Use the required tense of the Passive Voice instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. Each candidate (to question) in turn by two separate examiners. 2. Andrew saw at once that she (to instruct) carefully beforehand. 3. He insisted on seeing the article before it (to publish). 4. While the meal (to prepare) the mother sat by the sick child's bedside. 5. Jennie (not to forget). We all remember her. 6. He opened his eyes and (to blind) by a circle smaller than the moon. 7. Not a single copy of the books he spoke of ever (to ask). 8. I (to inform) that you (to see) in Church Street in conversation with a young gentleman. 9. The room just (to move) into, it smells wet paint. 10. He didn't utter a word, knowing that whatever he said (to meet) by the same silence. 11. My question (not to answer) properly yet. 12. The shop looked shabbier in artificial light: the shelves were dusty and the ceiling (not to paint) since I went there.

Exercise 4. Put questions to the italicized parts.

1. The flowers have been kept without water *for a week*. 2. The walls are being covered *with green paint*. 3. Their children are not taken good care of *at home*. 4. This proposal will be thought over *next week*. 5. She has been told everything about *this matter*. 6. We were told *the train would come nearly at two*. 7. He was sent for *very late*. 8. This room has been done up *for our return*. 9. *A new danger* was being carried towards them by the river. 10. He will never be allowed *into their house* again. 11. June was greatly encouraged *by his interest*. 12. The autumn leaves were being whirled *towards the sky*. 13. The business has been taken over *by a new company*. 14. *Two days later* the operation was performed.

Exercise 5. Use the required passive forms instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. Her brother (to elect) president of the new concern. 2. Do you know how pictures (to sell) nowadays? 3. She stared at the picture that (to snap) the night before at Morocco. 4. Back in the living-room, when coffee (to pour), Lily excused herself and left us. 5. Soames thought that perhaps Irene knew she (to shadow). 6. Then he wanted tools and

nails, and soon all the closets and shelves (to put) in order. 7. As his eyes cleared he saw that the lantern (to hold) in the air. 8. He felt he (to enlist) for the fight, that some duty (to lay) upon his shoulders. 9. The lists (to send) to both newspapers and now (to print). 10. There was vibration on the ground floor, and even more on the second, where I (to take). 11. When the goods (to pay) for a heavy freight wagon halted in front of the store. 12. In company with Suel James they ate dinner. While cigarettes (to roll) after the meal, Nowlen and his foreman went into the office. 13. All the things that Roberta and Harmon did for Ted (to do) for themselves long before Ted was born. 14. The ash-trays still held last night's cigarette ends, the sofa pillows (not to straighten), and there were two magazines on the floor in the exact position in which they (to leave) the previous night. 15. Don't keep telling me I'm pretty. I (to tell) that ever since I was twelve. 16. The letter said that for his thesis Andrew (to award) his M.D. 17. She looks like a spoiled child who (to punish). 18. Do you realize that these animals (to use) to save men's lives, perhaps your own lives?

Exercise 6. Use the required active or passive forms instead of the infinitives in brackets.

1. He (not to waste) time with foolish questions like why, when and where. He (to do) as he (to tell). 2. Always a punctual woman, she (to come) downstairs as the front door (to open) for Charles. 3. Some kind of public demonstration (to plan) to take place at the airport tonight. 4. The flight (not to announce) yet. It (not to announce) for another half-hour, at least. 5. The message, as Tanya (to dictate) it, (to type) by a girl clerk in New York. 6. She could tell by the inclination of his head that he (to listen) intently to everything that (to say). 7. It (to be) an old house that (to divide) into flats. 8. Julia can't know what (to say) about her, and someone must tell her. 9. Each apartment usually (to share) by two or three girls. They (to know) as stewardess' nests. 10. Inez (to occupy) a chair in the room's centre to which she (to guide) on arrival. 11. He (to see) that the doors of Trans America Flight Two (not to close) yet, and a few remaining passengers still (to check) in.

Exercise 7. Translate the sentences into English using the Passive Voice.

1. За ним послали двадцать минут назад. Он должен скоро прийти. 2. Этот вопрос сегодня обсуждаться не будет. 3. Ему всегда поручают важные задания. 4. В прошлом году на нашей улице построили новый магазин. 5. Эта книга еще не переведена на русский язык. 6. Я чувствую, что готовится какой-то опасный план. 7. В Москве каждый год строят много новых школ и детских садов. 8. Если за вами пришлют, не отказывайтесь прийти. 9. Почему на эту статью никогда не ссылаются? 10. Как только вещи были уложены, послали за машиной. 11. Я много о ней слышала. О ней очень хорошо отзываются. 12. Этого лектора всегда слушают с интересом. 13. Ему еще ничего об этом не говорили. 14. Книги этого автора часто спрашивают. 15. Было рассмотрено много способов, а об этом даже не подумали. 16. Больного не будут оперировать без его согласия. 17. Вам задавали дополнительные вопросы на экзамене? 18. В магазине ему предложили много книг на интересующую его тему. 19. Девочку бранят, вот почему она плачет. 20. Их приветствовали все, кто находился в зале. 21. Я почувствовала, что на меня смотрят. 22. Это и есть человек, о котором так много говорят. 23. За книгу уже уплачено. Можете взять ее. 24. Почему здесь так холодно? — Зал только что проветривали. 25. Новая библиотека была построена до того, как вы поступили в университет? 26. Пока варили ужин, мальчики сидели вокруг костра и разговаривали. 27. Когда включили радио, концерт шел уже примерно с полчаса. 28. Когда лодка пропала из виду, мы начали беспокоиться. 29. В этом доме не живут. Его скоро снесут. 30. Мне сказали, что уже ничего нельзя изменить, так как решение принято. 31. Не входите. Там экзаменуют последнего студента.

Mood

Exercise 1. Comment on the mood of the verb in the following sentences.

1. I thought that if I told you the circumstances you would understand afterwards if I wanted your help. I should feel so much stronger if I felt that you were at the back of me.

2. It was half a minute before I regained my self-possession. But for two circumstances, I should have thought I had been awakened by some nightmare. 3. I said to myself, well, after all, why should I go back? It wasn't as if I had anyone dependent on me. My wife had died four years before. 4. At the time we talked I was unaware that it had happened. Even if I had known, it would not have occurred to me as important enough to mention. 5. He lay on his back limply as though all the strength had gone out of his limbs, and presently I saw that he had fallen asleep. 6. She would have kept my house like a new pin, and I should have had a son to carry on the business after me. 7. Perhaps, it would have been better for me if my father's will had prevailed and I were now but an honest carpenter. 8. We both loved Blanche. There would have been room for him in my mother's house. I think the company of poor, simple people would have done his soul a great good. 9. I think he might have learnt from then something that would be very useful for him. 10. She wondered how he would feel she would have liked to talk to him about it now.

Exercise 2. Comment on the use of the Subjunctive Mood in simple sentences.

1. Then she wanted warm water. "If I just had a little hot water," she said in a weak voice without particular hope. 2. "If I were her father," he thought, "...or brother." 3. Sometimes he hated me. Oh, if you knew what agonies I endured! 4. If only she might appear at this instant! 5. If only he had learned to read and write, to use pencil and paper for storing things from the mind, as this man and others, like him did! 6. If it were only the other way! If it were I who was to be always young, and the picture that was to grow old! 7. If the picture could change and I could be always what I am now! 8. Oh, if you only knew what I've suffered!

Exercise 3. Comment on the use of the Oblique Moods in complex sentences with clauses of unreal condition. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. If you were me, here and now, what would you do? 2. He was a stranger to George and he was aware that if he met him in the street he would not recognize him. 3. They would

enjoy themselves much more if they had a party of their own. 4. I shouldn't have slept a wink all night if I hadn't known you were safe. 5. If I were Jim I wouldn't tell that to the judge. 6. If Howden had been less preoccupied he might have noticed that she seemed unusually radiant this morning. 7. If Miss Emily suffered half as much as she said she did, she would have sent for Dr Haydock long ago. 8. If you were a man you'd never speak to her again. 9. She was not old and if she had told you that she was forty you would have been quite willing to believe it. 10. If he closed his eyes, he thought, he would visualize the scene. 11. Oh, if he had had the better fortune to appear before another judge, more sympathetic, would the result be different now? 12. If it had been anybody else's play, he would have rejected it. 13. If he did retire, would anyone notice the difference? 14. Miss Marple interrupted him: "Oh, but they were not on bad terms!" — "You know that for a fact?" — "Everyone would have known if they'd quarrelled." 15. Mum and Dad were so old-fashioned that if he took a girl home, they would consider her visit as good as shouting an engagement from the house-tops. 16. If his wife had gone away and left a note on the pin-cushion, it would be the first he'd know of anything of that kind.

Exercise 4. Change into sentences of unreal condition.

1. You went to bed very late last night and you are feeling tired now. 2. We can't go boating as it is raining hard. 3. Bill didn't check his composition carefully and there are a lot of mistakes in it. 4. Nick fell off his bicycle yesterday because he was driving too fast. 5. She'll never master Greek, she isn't good at languages. 6. He has a sore throat as he ate two ice creams yesterday. 7. We enjoyed our visit to the country because the weather was fine. 8. I feel bored as the lecture isn't interesting. 9. I haven't invited him as I couldn't get in touch with him. 10. He is not bright, he cannot remember simple things. 11. She is not you, she behaves in her own way. 12. I don't have a typewriter, so I cannot type the paper. 13. Under different circumstances your proposal would be most welcome. 14. That would have been useful a month ago. 15. Another person would have acted differently.

Exercise 5. Supply the correct mood of the verbs in brackets.

1. If I (not to be) what I am, things (to be) so simple. 2. If you (to be allowed) to stay in Canada, what you (to do)? 3. I can only tell you that, if anyone (to suggest) to me yesterday that O'Murphy was a traitor, I (to laugh) in his face. 4. We are foolish and sentimental and melodramatic at twenty-five, but if we (not to be) perhaps we (to be) less wise at fifty. 5. "If it (to be) an accident," said Sir Henry gently, "I do not think Mrs Bautre (to tell) us this story." 6. I'm no doctor. If I (to be), do you think I (to waste) five dollars on you? 7. If I (to be) you I (to do) my hair rather differently. 8. I (not to mind) if he (to say) my pictures were bad, but he said nothing. 9. After all, if he (to have) any talent I (to be) the first to encourage him. 10. I (not to go) if you (not to say) you'd come with me. 11. How it (to be) if I (to drop) around this evening? 12. If only I (to feel) that somebody wanted me, that I was of use to somebody, I (to become) a different person. 13. Your manners are all right. I (not to bring) you here if they (not to be). Don't be uneasy. 14. If you (to let) me have my way before there (to be) no cause for our trouble tonight. 15. If I (to be) twenty-seven again I suppose I (to be) as big a fool as I was then. 16. Paul believed that his mother never (to say) the things she did if she (to know) that Paul could hear her.

Exercise 6. Complete the following sentences using the required Oblique Mood.

1. If you had been at home ... 2. If I were not so busy ... 3. She wouldn't have done it if ... 4. What would you answer if ... ? 5. You wouldn't have fallen ill if ... 6. If he had sent a telegram ... 7. The watch wouldn't have stopped if ... 8. If it were not raining ... 9. You would get excellent marks if ... 10. If I had known everything ... 11. If it were not so cold ... 12. I'd have got there long ago if ... 13. He would study much better if ... 14. She wouldn't say so if ... 15. If we knew him better ... 16. The child wouldn't be crying if ... 17. If you had managed to escape ...

Exercise 7. Comment on the word order in the following sentences. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. Had Irene been present, the family circle would have been complete. 2. Had he had time to think about it he would

have been certain that he was not told all. 3. It would have been incredible, indeed, had they not been victims themselves. 4. She used to wonder what on earth he would ever do were she to go away or be ill. 5. Jeunne, had she had time to collect her thoughts, would have tried to make some excuse but Louise swept past before Jeunne could say a word. 6. Were it not for the ugly wound upon my hand, all that had passed during those dreadful hours might have been an evil dream. 7. Had I died this morning, they would still be about their business, untouched and uncaring. 8. Hadn't the doctor told her that it was quite possible she might never have another fit. 9. Had I known who you really were, I should not have invited you to my house last night. 10. You would never have thought had you seen her a quarter of an hour later, that so short a while before she had passed through such a weeping. 11. Had he gone to his aunt he would have been sure to meet Lord Hoodbody there. 12. But she also sensed that had he been ill he would have got word to her.

Exercise 8. Translate the sentences into English.

1. Если бы я не знал его так хорошо, я бы не поверил тому, что он мне только что рассказал. 2. Мы все были бы рады, если бы он имел успех на завтрашнем вечере. 3. О, если бы я была тогда достаточно взрослой, чтобы понять всю серьезность положения! 4. Если бы ты положила книгу на место, она была бы сейчас здесь. 5. Если бы они начали эту работу сразу, они смогли бы закончить ее вовремя. 6. Я бы давно ей написала, если бы знала адрес. 7. Если бы сейчас было потеплее, я надела бы новое летнее пальто. 8. Будь я тогда там сама, я бы уладила это дело. 9. Если бы вы были внимательнее на прошлом уроке, вы бы сейчас лучше знали материал. 10. Ах, если бы только мы могли вам все объяснить! 11. Где бы ты меня ждал, если бы мы условились встретиться? 12. Если бы он не был болен тогда, он мог бы оказаться в гораздо большей опасности. 13. Кто знает, как бы он поступил, если бы услышал об этом раньше? 14. Я бы давно ответила на твой вопрос, если бы могла. 15. Все были бы рады, если бы вы зашли к нам еще раз до вашего отъезда. 16. Вы бы чувствовали себя лучше, если бы больше гуляли. 17. Ты

бы не разбил вазу, если бы был осторожнее. 18. Я бы не бранила тебя, знай я тогда то, что ты говоришь мне сейчас.

Exercise 9. Comment on the use of the Oblique Moods in the following sentences with clauses of unreal concession.

1. "You see," he said to me, "even if I'd been able to get back to England on leave I wouldn't have gone. I didn't want to go till I could go for good." 2. I've never loved anyone but Robert, and even if I didn't love Robert, you're the last man I should care for. 3. At the time we talked I was unaware that it had happened. Even if I had known, it would not have occurred to me as important enough to mention. 4. It was the captain's duty to be polite to a passenger, but even if he had been free to say what he liked, he knew he couldn't have brought himself to hurt her feelings. 5. Even though he knew that Arthur had discovered him, he might still flatter himself that he was safe, for the lad could not say a word without compromising his own family. 6. It was useless, Ogilvie knew. Even if he outdistanced pursuit now, he could not avoid others forewarned ahead. 7. Anyway, even if we'd been able to pay for the extra nurse, the matron wouldn't have kept her. 8. Even if they had education or money men like Passini would not wish to be officers. 9. Even if it were against herself it would make a good story. 10. And even if he did speak, all would be well.

Exercise 10. Comment on the use of the Subjunctive Mood in object clauses after the verb *to wish* and translate the sentences into Russian.

1. He wished now that when the director of his firm spoke to him he had answered differently. 2. I wish I knew how you reach your results. 3. I only wish that you could come with me, Watson, but I fear that it won't do. 4. She wished that it had been possible not to cause those two people such fearful distress. 5. "I wish you hadn't got such sharp eyes," she said. 6. I wished I hadn't wasted so much money when I got there. 7. I wish I deserved your compliments. I don't. 8. He had nothing against skiing — he wished he had had the time to take it up when he was a young man.

9. He wished he felt more conviction on the point. 10. Oh, I wish I hadn't sent him that letter telling him to take care of himself. 11. I know this is none of my business. But I wish I knew what it's all about. 12. I wonder if we ought to have played that trick on Miss Reid. I almost wish we'd left her alone. 13. I wish you could stay and then we could talk over my picture. 14. I only wish it had lasted twice as long. 15. I always remember everything. Some people wish I didn't. 16. I wish you didn't have to go. Why must you?

Exercise 11. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use the Subjunctive Mood after the verb to wish.

1. He was sorry he couldn't join us. 2. It's a pity you were absent yesterday. 3. I'd like him to be more polite. 4. They are sorry they didn't invite her. 5. He was disappointed that he would not be able to see the film. 6. I regret now not having told her all the truth then. 7. What a pity you can't swim. 8. I'm awfully sorry I kept you waiting so long. 9. It's a pity I couldn't go to the theatre with you. 10. I'm very sorry that I have disturbed you. 11. It's a pity you are leaving so soon. 12. I'd like to see the film again. 13. It was a pity we could not see the stage well. 14. They were sorry they hadn't taken a taxi and had missed their train.

Exercise 12. Supply the correct form of the Subjunctive Mood of the verbs in brackets.

1. Oh, I wish I (not to send) him that letter. I'd give anything to take it back. 2. I wish I (to be) as sure as you. 3. But he wished that there (to be) some way in which he could help the young lawyer. 4. "I wish I (not to cry) so much," said Alice trying to find her way out. 5. And here I wish I (can) tell you half of the things Alice used to say. 6. I rather wished Poirot (to be) there. 7. I wish I (to know) it was your friend. 8. He wished he (to come) by air. 9. I wish I (to know) what to do now. 10. I wish that poor Strickland (to be) still alive. 11. I wish I (to know) it was your birthday, Lady Windermere, I would have covered the whole street in front of your house with flowers. 12. I wish they (to be) back. 13. I wished I (to have) enough confidence so that I could transfer some to her. But I didn't. 14. I wish I never (to hear) of it. 15. I wish to Christ

we (to have) bicycles. 16. I wish I (to know) where we are going. 17. I wish that I (to be) with the British. It would have been much simpler.

Exercise 13. Translate into English using the Subjunctive Mood in object clauses.

1. Как жаль, что вы были так неосторожны. Этого бы не случилось, если бы вы послушали совета наших друзей. 2. Как жаль, что это произошло в ваше отсутствие. 3. Жаль, что вы не интересуетесь искусством. 4. Я теперь жалею, что не захватила с собой таблетки от головной боли. 5. Ты пожалеешь, что не пошел со мной. 6. Жаль, что вы сохранили письмо. 7. Хотя бы ей кто-нибудь сказал, что это невежливо. 8. Ей очень хотелось, чтобы кто-нибудь заметил ее и спросил, что она тут делает. 9. Хорошо, если бы вы всегда приходили вовремя. 10. Жаль, что вы не смогли посмотреть этот матч. 11. Досадно, что преподаватель обращает мало внимания на ваше произношение. 12. Хотелось бы мне, чтобы вы были осторожнее в следующий раз. 13. Как жаль, что я не могу как следует описать вам сцену, которая затем последовала. 14. Как жаль, что доктор ушел. Я не спросила его, когда принимать лекарство. 15. Обидно, что мы не знаем его адреса. Мы могли бы сходить к нему сегодня же. 16. Жаль, что в детстве меня не учили никакому иностранному языку. 17. Она жалела, что ей не было слышно, о чем говорили внизу. 18. Я бы хотела, чтобы ты содержал все свои вещи в порядке. 19. Напрасно он не посвятил свою жизнь математике. Это его любимый предмет с детства.

Exercise 14. Comment on the use of the Subjunctive Mood in clauses introduced by *as if* and *as though*.

1. For a moment or two she remained by the desk, one hand touching the telephone, as if a thread of contact still remained. 2. He was not so well-dressed as Robert, who always looked as though he had stepped out of a shop-window, but he wore his old clothes as though it didn't much matter what one wore. 3. He had been feeling more comfortable every day, in fact he was beginning to feel as if he'd never been away. 4. He found Brenner standing on the sidewalk in

his dirty raincoat and shaking as though he were suffering from a malarial attack. 5. He looked at me as though he wanted to ask me something. 6. "I'm glad you could come, gentlemen." Curtis O'Keefe informed them, as if this meeting had not been planned weeks ahead. 7. She looked fresh and clean as though nothing had happened to her that night. 8. She looked at me as though that were the end of the interview and she expected me to get up and take myself off. 9. She looked as though she had been crying. 10. Hurstwood gazed at it a moment as if something were scratching him. 11. It was Sunday, and there was a feeling of quietness, a silence as though nature were at rest. 12. A convulsion racked him as though he had been touched by a high-tension wire. 13. His heart laboured as though it were pumping sand, not blood, not liquid, he thought. 14. I sat in the garden feeling as though I were home again. 15. It was as if someone he had never known had written the story. 16. There was a pause, with heavy breathing, as if a moment of emotion were being controlled. 17. It was as if Marthy had received a physical blow and were rocking on her feet. 18. When he finally broke the silence his voice was as hoarse as though he had been shouting inside himself.

Exercise 15. Supply the necessary forms of the Subjunctive Mood in clauses introduced by *as if* and *as though*.

1. Whenever I saw them it looked as though they (to be) on very good terms with one another. 2. The knife shone as though it just (to come) out of the workshop. 3. As I opened my door I seemed to hear a changing sound as if a mass of metal (to fall). 4. Suddenly the voice was clear and strong as if Constance (to be) in another room of the hotel. 5. Fred wasn't shy, and he talked to Gracie's parents as though he (to know) them all his life. 6. His tanned, smooth skin looked as though a razor never (to touch) it. 7. You behave as if you (to be married) to her already. 8. You look as though you (not to have) much sleep the last night or two. 9. She noticed a shade of thought pass over his face as if he (to begin) to realize that things were changed. 10. He felt as if he (to catch) cold. 11. He leaned against the desk, and upon my word he was shaking as though he (to get) fever. 12. He looked

as if he (to step) from the pages of "Pickwick Papers". 13. She always smelled as though she just (to come) from a long walk in a forest. 14. She clutched the letter to her heart as though she (to think) I would take it from her. 15. He looked as if he (not to have) a meal for a week, and I hadn't the heart to refuse him. 16. Sharon frowned as if she (to be puzzled). 17. He looked as if he (not to sleep) much lately.

Exercise 16. Translate the sentences into English.

1. Вы так загорели, словно все лето провели на юге. 2. Она смотрела на меня, как будто не узнавая. 3. Вы так много курите, как будто вы чем-то взволнованы. 4. Я уверена, он сделает вид, будто слышит об этом впервые. 5. Что с вами? У вас такой вид, будто вам нехорошо. 6. Она ведет себя так, будто она ребенок. 7. Минуту, другую он стоял посреди комнаты, как будто не зная, что делать. 8. Почему вы смотрите на меня так, словно я говорю неправду? 9. Она говорила и смеялась, словно играла на сцене. 10. Я люблю тебя так, как любил бы собственную сестру. 11. У меня было такое чувство, будто мы говорим с ним на разных языках. 12. Я уверена, он будет держаться так, будто не чувствует никакой боли. 13. Она дышала так тяжело, как будто бежала всю дорогу. 14. Он говорит так, как будто повторяет чьи-то слова. 15. У вас такой вид, словно вы не знаете, куда идти. 16. Он говорил о вас так, будто хорошо вас знает. 17. Я помню все так четко, словно это произошло вчера. 18. Почему у тебя такой вид, будто ты мне не веришь? 19. Похоже, что все уже ушли. 20. У меня такое чувство, будто меня обманули. 21. Он говорит так, как будто ему не семнадцать лет, а семьдесят.

Exercise 17. Comment on the use of the Conditional Mood and translate the sentences into Russian.

1. In his place I should have been more embarrassed and less calm. 2. Well, my dear, I do many things to please you I should never do to please myself. 3. I should never have thought that peeling potatoes was such an undertaking. 4. Another ten minutes and we shouldn't have been there, and then I shouldn't have got back home till twelve. 5. I am a passenger, or else I should be a steward, I think. 6. It would have

been more economical to live at the villa. 7. But for David he would never have slipped out of the affair like this. 8. You are silly, you know I like you or else I shouldn't be here. 9. Who would have thought of such a meeting after so many years? 10. To go back there would only make it more difficult. 11. Nothing would be solved by opening our doors wide to all comers. 12. He answered: "I'd like to say 'no', but it wouldn't be true." 13. I hadn't known about the fact, otherwise I would have given you the extra day. 14. What would have been natural for me was absurd for him. 15. She was by this time a woman of hard on sixty, but she bore her years well, and no one would have taken her for more than fifty. 16. I'm sure a daughter would be a great amusement to you. 17. He would have gone out and come in again, but he was too concerned.

Exercise 18. Replace the infinitives in brackets by the correct form of the Conditional Mood.

1. I didn't know about the fact, otherwise I (to give) you the extra day. 2. To go back then only (to make) it more difficult. 3. There was no piano because it (to take up) much room. 4. I don't know what we (to do) but for Nurse Duggon. 5. Last night it (to be) quite impossible. 6. How wonderful it (to be) to take the sadness out of those big and lovely eyes! 7. Billy (to adore) to live in the country. His ideal happiness was to have a pleasant cottage. 8. I (to like) to say 'no' but it (not to be) true. 9. But for his last remark she (not to start) a bargain. 10. Normally by now the court-room (to be) almost empty but for one or two lawyers. 11. To say that John Forsyte accompanied his mother to Spain unwillingly (to be) scarcely adequate. 12. She didn't know anything or she (not to agree) to accept them. 13. Nobody ever (to say) that he is a shy and timid man. 14. I don't know what I (to do) without you, my dear boy. 15. The sensation with which James dropped the letter was similar to that he (to have) entering his bedroom and finding it full of blackbeetles. 16. But for that letter on the table she (not to accuse) you. 17. He (to do) everything but nobody asked him to. 18. And then you were surprised because she threw your slippers at you. I (to throw) the fire-irons at you. 19. She was just the sort of person I (to expect) the wife of a professor to be.

Exercise 19. Comment on the use of the synthetic forms of the Present Subjunctive and translate the sentences into Russian.

1. She suggested that this date be a day of international solidarity. 2. He demanded that his honour be satisfied. 3. They proposed to him that he become one of their gang. 4. Arrange with the telephone calls so that every month I get a list of all the calls. 5. It is proposed that these measures be discussed at a conference on military detente and disarmament in Europe. 6. It is important, however, that no hasty actions be taken which could complicate the situation. 7. I suggest that we go to Cannes and find out everything about the yacht. 8. "I'd suggest," said the old man mildly, "that you read the message." 9. "How many Samuel Adamsees are there?" — "Only one, the Lord be praised." 10. Do you know that every man of rank and figure in this province is desirous that his daughter be married to a man who never saw her? 11. I think you should take it with you, Charlie. And I suggest you show it to Joe Pearson.

Exercise 20. Translate the sentences into English.

1. Как жаль, что мы потратили так много времени напрасно. 2. На вашем месте я бы знал, что делать. 3. Этот фильм понравился бы мне больше, если бы он был односерийным. 4. Она смотрит на меня, будто знает меня. Наверное, мы где-нибудь встречались. 5. Его доклад не был бы таким скучным, если бы он привел больше фактов. 6. Думаю, нам пора разжечь костер. 7. Жаль, что я не пообедал дома. 8. Если бы вы не сидели на сквозняке, вы бы не простудились. 9. Никто тебя и слушать бы там не стал. 10. Если бы не случай, мы никогда бы не встретились. 11. Жаль, что вы не подождали меня. Мы поехали бы осматривать город вместе. 12. Если бы он знал, что лекция не состоится, он не пригласил бы профессора Джонсона. 13. Жаль, что вы ничем не интересуетесь. 14. Если бы не серьезное выражение его лица, мы приняли бы это за шутку. 15. Мы ничего об этом не знали; мы никогда не согласились бы на это. 16. Ах, если бы я подумала об этом, когда еще не было поздно! 17. Если бы не Джордж, все было бы испорчено. 18. Артур не изменил бы своего решения, даже если бы Джемма попроси-

ла его об этом. 19. Если бы вы только знали, как я волновалась! 20. Жаль, что меня не было с вами, когда это случилось. 21. Если бы не акцент, никто не сказал бы, что он нерусский. 22. Если бы вы хорошо подготовились к контрольной работе, вы не сделали бы в ней так много ошибок. 23. Я бы тебе позвонил, да у вас телефон не работал. 24. Жаль, что я уехал из Кейптауна. Лучше бы мне было там остаться. 25. О, если бы всегда была весна, сияло солнце и небо было безоблачным! 26. Он бы тотчас ушел, если бы не Лиззи. 27. Вам давно пора знать эти правила. Мы повторяем их на каждом уроке. 28. Будь я на вашем месте, я бы опубликовал эти стихи. 29. Он не поехал бы туда в тот вечер, если бы знал, что его друга не будет дома. 30. Мне бы не хотелось, чтобы вы расстраивались из-за таких пустяков.

Exercise 21. Replace the infinitives in brackets by the correct form of the Oblique Mood.

1. Elizabeth gave him a look that some years before (to please) him. 2. If you (to tell) me you wanted to come I (to extend) to you a formal invitation. 3. The attempt at a smile made him look as if he (to be) sea-sick. 4. A huge stone stands in this deserted place as if it (to take up) here by a giant. 5. A few years ago in a storm like this an airport (to close) completely. Now it did not. 6. He always looked as if he (to need) a good meal. 7. I tell you straight, if it (not to be) for you, I (to pick up) my things and (to leave). 8. It seemed as if his family troubles just (to begin). 9. If you (to do) this a year ago there (to be) some use in it. 10. "I wish I (to know) where we are going," she repeated for the twentieth time. 11. He spoke curiously as if he (to be) nearly in tears, as if he, not she, (to suffer) from strain. 12. Two or three steps farther and her life (to be) in danger. 13. (to be) Irene present, the family circle (to be) complete. 14. To his surprise Mrs Garnet was not so much opposed to the notion as he (to expect). 15. He sounded breathless on the telephone as though he (to run). 16. But for her self-control the mystery (to be) at an end tonight. 17. If you (to spend) money for a decent doctor when she was so sick she never (to know) morphine existed!

Exercise 22. Replace the infinitives in brackets by the correct form of the Oblique Mood.

1. If it (to be) all the same to me, I (not to come) and (to talk) to you. 2. (to be) there some more of us, it (to take) only a few days to get through with it. 3. Both of them fell to their roles as though they (to be born) to them, as though it (to be) in their blood, as though they (to be guided) by an instinct. 4. I wished I (not to dwell) upon that occasion. 5. No sooner had I closed the door behind him than I felt as if something very evil just (to leave) the room. 6. But for his stupid jokes I (to stay) there longer. 7. It's time you (to understand) that this is no joke. 8. I didn't say anything just then but I certainly wish I (to say) something. 9. If he (to find) me in his office he (to be) furious. 10. I wish you (not to speak) to me as if I (to be) a police inspector. 11. If I (to be) your mother I (to insist) on your going. 12. He looked the room over as if he (to think) of renting it. 13. I wish I (to know) it was birthday, Lady Windermere, I (to cover) the whole street in front of your house with flowers for you to walk. 14. If I (to have) a right I (to sit) down at the piano for hours. I wish I (can) buy it. 15. He felt as if his troubles (not to be) very serious. 16. Indeed, with more hair and less collar, he (to look) completely Byronic.

Modal Verbs

Exercise 1. Say whether *could* is the form of the Indicative or of the Subjunctive. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. *Could* I pick some roses as well? Or a mixed bunch of things? 2. It was a pity that she was ill and *could not* go. 3. Edmund, darling, *could* she have the bedside lamp out of your study, just for this evening? 4. In the old days, people *could* feed nearly all the animals. 5. If she had had money she *could* perhaps have paid for everything; as things were, she *could* do nothing of the kind. 6. He *could* think of nothing to say in reply and so he didn't. 7. I've broken it (the thermometer). How *could* I have cut myself on it if I hadn't? 8. Her literary agent friend rang up and asked if she *could* come down for dinner. 9. I just seem to know nobody who I *could* ring and

say I just feel awful and I haven't a penny. 10. She went to the bed, and bent down so that Anne *could* kiss her. 11. The driver's face was of a complexion on to which you *could* have dropped a fried egg without anyone noticing. 12. The windows were open, and the scent of jasmine and roses *could* be smelled. 13. Janet tried to imagine what an unserious talk *could* have been like. 14. If only they *could* talk, everything would seem easier and better. 15. She *couldn't* come to Paris, she said; she was nursing Mrs Cornhill, there was nobody else in the house, and she *couldn't* leave. 16. It was a big barn and we *could* hide in the hay if we heard anyone. 17. If you're planning to open a shop or build a ship you *couldn't* have come to a better man. 18. She was so tired, she *couldn't* drag herself upstairs to dress. 19. After all if she *couldn't* do what she liked who *could*? 20. He *could* hardly have been so cool about it, so open, if there were anything in it.

Exercise 2. Comment on the form and meaning of the verb *can*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. I can't shift the bolts on the wheel, at all. I'll have to get help. 2. I speak three languages and I can't spell in any of them. 3. You could join her much later if she wants you to go on the yacht. 4. "Shall I fill some pots now?" — "You can do the whole thing if you like." 5. Could you stop the car, please, for a moment? 6. Oh, really. She can't put up with that! 7. I wish he could have a pony of his own. 8. All the shelves were wedged tight with books, but there still existed large numbers of books which could find no place in the shelves. 9. How could she have been so cold, so unloving to this adorable creature? How could she have been so blind? 10. "Oh, it's you, Sue." — "Yes. Can I come in?" 11. What is not done today, could be done tomorrow. 12. There was nothing he could do about it at the moment. 13. I could never have believed till I came here that natural courtesy could be such a wonderful — such a positive thing. 14. "Why didn't you stop all that?" — "How could I?" — "You could have found some way." — "Could I, I wonder?" 15. Where's Miss Laura? She came out right after me. Where can she be? 16. You can't live other people's lives for them. 17. If she could go away somewhere! 18. What can have happened?

Exercise 3. Use the verb *can* in the correct form followed by the appropriate infinitive.

1. He ... (to recite) long poems when he was six. 2. You ... not (to take) the books out of the reading hall. 3. If you had met him in the street you ... (to pass) him without taking notice. 4. He hated himself for his behaviour, but ... (to do) nothing to alter it. 5. ... I (to come) in for a moment? 6. You ... not (to do) it. I don't believe it. 7. I wonder where she is. She ... not (to stay) at her friend's all this time. 8. I ... (to help) him but I didn't know he needed help. 9. Such problems ... (to solve) easily. 10. He ... (to see) that everything in the flat was in full order. 11. How ... she (to work) in the garden now? It is already dark. 12. Of course, there were many things I ... (to answer) to this. But I kept silent. 13. I simply ... not (to refuse). They would have been hurt. 14. He wasn't old ... He ... not (to be) more than forty. 15. ... you (to work) all this time without any break? 16. She ... not (to forget) what had happened the day before.

Exercise 4. Translate into English using the verb *can*.

1. У детей богатое воображение. Они могут легко придумывать разные истории. 2. Ты можешь взять словарь. Мне он больше не нужен. 3. Не может быть, чтобы она была так груба с вами. 4. Неужели она и сейчас думает обо мне? 5. Неужели это правда, что она вышла замуж за Джона? 6. Вряд ли они придут сегодня. Уже поздно. 7. Если бы не ваш зонтик, я бы вся промокла. Дождь лил как из ведра. 8. Не может быть, чтобы сейчас было лишь три часа. Ваши часы остановились. 9. Я могла бы вам это сразу сказать, но мне не хотелось расстраивать вас. 10. Не может быть, чтобы вы этому действительно верили. 11. Не мог он принять вас за другого. 12. Можно мы возьмем Джека с собой? 13. Неужели они опоздали на поезд? Они же вышли из дома очень рано. 14. Нет, малыш, зимой мороженое на улице есть нельзя. 15. Вы не могли бы продиктовать мне эту страницу? 16. Неужели они ждут нас у другого выхода? 17. Вы не могли бы привести свой пример? Нельзя давать примеры только из учебника. 18. Не может быть, чтобы это была Лора. Ее в то время не было в городе. 19. Неужели он был прав?

Exercise 5. Comment on the form and meaning of the verb *may*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. I think, when I'm twenty-five, then I may get control of money. 2. You may get up now. 3. The telephone went on ringing. Anne said: "It might be Edmund. He might have missed his plane." 4. Supper passed off better than might have been expected. 5. His eyes were so close together that I honestly thought they might run into each other one day. 6. Well, don't let's look on the black side of things. She may get over it in a few weeks. 7. I wouldn't dream of getting in yours of Anne's way, whatever that may be. 8. I think she feels about you rather as she might about a daughter. 9. Oh please! You tell her. Tell her that you want me to stay. She might believe you. She never believes me. 10. Whatever her idea of fun might be she clearly wasn't having it, and did not much enjoy seeing other people full of any kind of cheer. 11. "Why on earth did you shout about brandy in front of the police?" — "You might have got us into trouble." 12. He likes to be the first person to be looked after in this house, and if I had a baby he mightn't be. 13. It was entirely my fault. Please, forgive me. May I kiss you? 14. "He might have killed me," she kept thinking. Indeed, had she stayed, there was a very good chance that he might do just that, by mistake, of course, as he seemed to do most things. 15. There is a chance de Winter might have been seen that night. 16. "I wonder if I might ask your advice," he said at last. 17. "May I speak to you?" I said to the nurse. 18. I thought we might go and have a snack together before the show. 19. He seemed to observe them with a detached curiosity like that with which he might have observed animals in a zoo. 20. May it never be forgotten!

Exercise 6. Translate into English using the verb *may*.

1. Может быть, ей и не нравился новый учитель, но она его несколько не боялась. 2. Можете зайти к нам после семи, если хотите. 3. Ты могла бы по крайней мере посоветоваться с сестрой! 4. Может быть, на вас никто и внимания не обратит. 5. Оливер спросил, можно ли ему получить еще тарелку каши. 6. Больному стало лучше. Вы можете навесить его завтра. 7. Тебе можно быть и посерьезнее. Ты уже

почти взрослый. 8. Где же мой паспорт? — Возможно, ты забыл его дома. 9. Спроси их, можно ли нам тоже пойти с ними в поход. 10. Возможно, его не было на лекции. — Но он говорит, что он там был. 11. Она не была англичанкой, но ее можно было принять за нее. 12. Возможно, летом меня не будет в городе. 13. Он стоял довольно далеко от них и, возможно, не слышал их слов. 14. Как бы надолго ты ни уехал, я буду ждать тебя. 15. Ты мог бы купить мне эту книгу! Ты знал, что она мне очень нужна.

Exercise 7. Fill in the blanks with the verbs *can* or *may*.

1. It ... have been anything serious, or I should have remembered. 2. You ... have noticed that I happen to wear my hair rather long. 3. She ... never remember clearly what came after. 4. You ... have noticed he was not himself at lunch. 5. If she ... only see what he's really like! 6. ... I now and then come and sit here and talk to you? 7. I ... have more questions to ask you later. 8. ... you possibly lend us a hundred pounds? 9. It ... have been some days ago — weeks perhaps. Or — it ... have been yesterday afternoon. 10. One ... not know, you see, what is important. 11. He chose an inside table against the back wall where he ... look over the other tables to the people walking in the street. 12. Of course, I ... be imagining it, but I don't think I am. 13. Be careful — did you hurt yourself? You ... have struck your head on that marble chimney-piece. 14. "Shirley, don't hate me." — "Hate you? How ... I hate you?" 15. I ... have one or two people coming in tomorrow evening. Why not join us? 16. I ... not bring myself to forgive him. 17. ... I order you something? 18. Shirley ... have told you what she wouldn't like to tell me. 19. She ... see no harm in just bringing Josephine on the terrace. 20. You ... have seen Mr de Winter's name in the papers recently. 21. She turned on the light as though it ... warm her. 22. Yes, it was awful, but what ... I do? — You ... have asked my advice! 23. Harry ... often be seen sitting on the porch with a pipe in his mouth.

Exercise 8. Translate the sentences into English using *can* or *may*.

1. Спросите ее, может ли она пойти с нами. 2. Вы, возможно, заметили, что он дважды повторил эти слова. 3. Почему она не пришла? Неужели она передумала? 4. Не возвра-

чайте книгу в библиотеку. Она может вам понадобится перед экзаменом. 5. Я могла бы вас встретить, но я не получила вашего письма. 6. Куда бы вы ни пошли, вам везде скажут то же самое. 7. Не могли бы вы помочь мне? Может быть, у вас будет свободная минутка. 8. Не может быть, чтобы я не заперла дверь, когда уходила. Возможно, соседи открыли ее. 9. Вряд ли он хотел вас обидеть. Вы его просто не так поняли. 10. Вы могли бы быть с ним повежливее! Ведь он намного старше вас! 11. Может быть, это показалось вам смешным. Но как могли вы рассмеяться? 12. Жаль, что никто не смог вас предупредить. 13. Можно мне пойти погулять? — Нет, нельзя. Уже поздно. 14. Возможно, в молодости она была красавицей, но сейчас ее так назвать нельзя. 15. У меня было очень мало времени, иначе я смогла бы перевести весь текст. 16. Неужели ребенок все еще спит? Давно пора его разбудить. 17. Вы можете на него положиться. Он очень ответственный человек. 18. Не может быть, чтобы они вас не проводили, когда вы будете уезжать. 19. Жаль, что ничего нельзя было сделать. 20. Не мог он этого сказать. Он не так глуп, как ты думаешь. 21. — Где можно посмотреть этот фильм? — Боюсь, что его сейчас нигде нельзя посмотреть. Это старый фильм. 22. Не может быть, чтобы она вам об этом не писала. Вы просто забыли.

Exercise 9. Comment on the meaning of the verb *must*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. I suppose one must be serious sometimes. 2. It must be seven. 3. Harry, you are horrible! You mustn't say these dreadful things. 4. Nothing must be done in a hurry. 5. You and I are friends, Basil, and we must always remain so. 6. I've always thought he must be quite clever in his way. 7. Surely it must have been O'Murphy's doing. 8. I must be getting sentimental. 9. But surely you agree with me that the other woman must have gone to the wrong flat. That is the only possible solution. 10. "I am afraid I must be going, Basil," he murmured. 11. It was in that tone that he must have spoken to his children when they were tiresome. 12. She must have watched him hide the books in the garden and brought them back in. 13. You mustn't say that, you mustn't think that.

14. He looked sixty, but I knew he must be much less than that. 15. She must be found and brought back here at once. 16. Her life must have been very unhappy. 17. You must be in love. 18. "You mustn't talk so much," the doctor said. 19. She must have been a very stupid woman, or else very inexperienced. 20. You must be telling another lie.

Exercise 10. Translate into English using the verb *must*.

1. Она, должно быть, заболела. Иначе она была бы уже на работе. 2. По-видимому, это труднее, чем вы предполагали. 3. В окнах нет света. Должно быть, опять никого нет дома. 4. У вас очень много ошибок. Надо уделять больше внимания грамматике. 5. Этот вопрос надо решать немедленно. 6. Очевидно, они говорили обо мне. Когда я подошла, они сразу замолчали. 7. Должно быть, она проводит там много времени. 8. Никого сюда не впускать! Понятно? 9. Детей надо учить плавать как можно раньше. 10. Она, наверное, все знала, но не хотела меня расстраивать. 11. Очевидно, она сердита на вас, поэтому она не звонит и не заходит. 12. Я звонила вам вчера около шести, но никто не ответил. — Должно быть, я выходила за хлебом. 13. Он наверняка не знает о вашем отъезде, а то бы он пришел вас проводить.

Exercise 11. Fill in the blanks with the verbs *can*, *may* or *must*.

1. Perhaps he went to the beach by another way, I ... have missed him. 2. They ... not have had the key. It never left me day and night. 3. "Impossible," I cried. "You ... be making a mistake." 4. Will you give him these cards and ask if we ... see him for a moment? 5. You ... go upstairs and use our bathroom. 6. But surely he ... have gone to the wrong flat. That is the only possible solution. 7. Yes, you ... leave the room now. But be careful. 8. She ... have been talking to your father, she ... not have been talking to anyone else. 9. He's honest enough, whatever else he ... be. 10. You absolutely ... come and see that place. 11. He was a nice-looking young fellow with a touch of greying hair at the temples though he ... not have been much over thirty. 12. I strolled across the lawn to the house, aware that they ... be watching me still from a chink in the shutters. 13. Let me introduce

you to Monsieur Poirot, of whom you ... often have heard. 14. But it ... not have been anything serious, or I should have remembered. 15. Some astonishment ... have shown itself on his face, for she looked at him and paused. 16. Perhaps it ... have been better if you hadn't written letters to us. 17. She asked the fishmonger if she ... leave the basket with him while she got some other things. 18. ... I have some more of that delicious salad, do you think? 19. Helena, you ... not leave him. He needs you, I know he needs you. 20. I adore Scarlatti. Partly because only musicians ... play him. 21. I ... have been the first person to put on that mackintosh since the handkerchief was used. 22. What you tell me ... be true, but it happened many years ago. 23. Her hair hung down so that Anne ... not see her face. 24. It ... have been twenty minutes past seven when he heard the call. That ... be a fact useful to the police if anything ... be discovered. 25. I ... swim when I was five. Daddy taught me. 26. You ... also address me as Aunt Augusta for the future.

Exercise 12. Comment on the meaning of *have to* and *have got to*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

a) 1. You saw me, and I had to tell you what had happened. 2. Something — he did not know what — had to be done at once. 3. I shall have to go home and get some things from the laboratory. 4. He is almost giddy with anger, and has to steady himself on the chair. 5. He may have to go to Monte Carlo with his father. 6. Every time I sat on the edge of his bed to listen to him talking or reading to me, I had to fight back my tears. 7. Things that were dangerous had to be destroyed. 8. She will have to see that doctor. If I've to take off and take her myself — she'll have to see him. 9. The only pity was one had to pay so often for a single fault. 10. I am sorry to have had to wake you up, Francis. 11. All we have to do is walk now. We don't have to worry.

b) 1. Look, Jon, you can just see where I've got to cross the river. 2. I've got to see her first. 3. You've got to think about me now. 4. Listen, darling — you've got to tell him. 5. He's got to grow up sometime. 6. We've got to be careful. 7. What you have got to do is to destroy the thing that is upstairs. 8. If they say you've got to see him — you've got to

see him, Mother. 9. Don't go shuffling along as if you were dead. I've got to have people with life in them. 10. If I've got to listen to more of your long stories I shall have to have another drink. 11. "Will you bring me aspirin and water?" — "You've got to get up," she said. "It's noon. You've slept five hours later than usual."

Exercise 13. Comment on the meaning of *be + infinitive* construction. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. We are to see her tonight, if that boy doesn't forget his appointment. 2. He told him that we were about to be turned out of our flat for not paying the rent. 3. He is going to be there, and I am to play Juliet. 4. He confided to me that all the dramatic critics were in a conspiracy against him, and that they were, every of them, to be bought. 5. We were to have gone away together this morning at dawn. 6. Besides, without my stirring in the matter, you are to be arrested. 7. He felt a terrible joy at the thought that someone else was to share his secret. 8. She reminded him that they were to meet at eight-fifteen that evening. 9. Dorian unlocked the door that opened into the room that was to keep for him the curious secret of his life and hide his soul from the eyes of men. 10. Originally Mrs Legge was to have taken the part of the victim. 11. He looked at the little chap. "I'm to bring an answer," said the boy. 12. Lady Stubbs was not to be found. She'd got bored with the show. 13. You seem to have organized everything to perfection. Am I to congratulate you or my charming hostess? 14. We were to have played a duet together — three duets, I believe. 15. I was to leave the Embassy with the military attaché. 16. It was some consolation that Harry was to be there. 17. Where am I to turn? 18. You are to take Lord Windermere down to your club at once. 19. My dear father, if I am to get married, surely you will allow me to choose the time, place and person.

Exercise 14. Fill in the blanks with *must*, *have to* or *be to*.

1. To work with method, one ... begin from the beginning. 2. I ... be getting sentimental. 3. Nowadays one ... do nearly everything oneself. 4. I ... think who she was talking about. She ... have meant your father. 5. He ... leave the

vessel at Melbourne and go off at once to the gold-fields. 6. I had left my key at home, and my servant ... let me in. 7. I ... be mad, coming here like this. 8. We ... dine together and then go to the Opera. 9. But who was it — Daniels or O'Murphy? It ... have been one of the two. 10. The man lost his way and ... drive back half a mile. 11. It seemed horrible to him that it was here the fatal portrait ... be hidden away. 12. The man ... touch him twice on the shoulder before he woke. 13. This was comedy, one ... not make it into tragedy. 14. Two days ago I asked Sibyl to marry me. I am not going to break my word to her. She ... be my wife. 15. I am afraid that you ... go back the way you came. There is no through road. 16. She ... not to return to dear Mamma or to Sheffield, not ever again. 17. The next afternoon there ... be an attack up the river. 18. The carriage ... have come back by this time. 19. Sooner or later we all ... pay for what we do. 20. I asked what time the attack ... be and they said as soon as it was dark. 21. I was very hot and ... take a drink of beer to cool my mouth.

Exercise 15. Comment on the meaning of the modal verb *need*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. I was rather afraid that he might act as though we were intimate friends. But I need not have worried. 2. You needn't be afraid of telling me everything. 3. If you don't like the dress, you needn't take it. 4. You needn't have walked there. You could have taken a bus. 5. Need we continue working by this plan? 6. I needn't bother about Margaret any more. 7. "I've got lots of time. I needn't go home for hours," she said. 8. "You rest," she said. "I'll certainly make the tea. You needn't have asked me." 9. Everything is packed, except my shirts, so you needn't trouble. 10. Our friendship needn't stop, need it?

Exercise 16. Translate into English using *can*, *may*, *must*, *have to*, *be to* or *need*.

1. Это был последний автобус. Теперь вам придется идти на станцию пешком. 2. Не надо ее будить. Она поздно легла. Я все сделаю сама. 3. Вот и ты наконец! Гости собрались, мы, должно быть, уже целый час ждем тебя.

4. Незачем было так торопиться. У вас было достаточно времени. 5. Нам не суждено было встретиться до его отъезда на континент. 6. «Должны ли мы перевести всю статью сегодня?» — «Нет, не надо. Вы можете это сделать завтра». 7. Наверное, она получила неприятные известия. Она так расстроена. 8. Позавчера я должен был встречать свою сестру, но мои часы, должно быть, отстали, и я опоздал. Когда я узнал, что поезд уже прибыл, мне пришлось взять такси и поспешить домой, так как у сестры не было ключа от квартиры. 9. Вам можно было и не приходить. 10. Не смей шуметь! Братя делают уроки. 11. Ты могла бы позвонить и сказать, что задержишься! Мы так волновались. 12. Если так будет продолжаться, нам придется принять меры. 13. Он давно ушел и к пяти часам должен вернуться. 14. Это должно было случиться. Никто не мог этому помешать. 15. Почему им пришлось уехать из этого дома? 16. Я должна была там быть час тому назад. Они могут подумать, что со мной что-то случилось. 17. Должно быть, они что-то заподозрили. 18. Он сказал мне, что я должен ждать его здесь. 19. Напрасно вы волновались. Все прошло отлично. 20. Сегодня первый день каникул и не надо идти в школу.

Exercise 17. Comment on the meaning of the verb *ought*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. What do you think we ought to do about babies? 2. He ought to be in looking after his mother. 3. You know, you ought to see a doctor. 4. He had been wrong to let the boy get away with that letter; he ought to have kept him under his eyes from the start! 5. I'll tell you something I think you ought to know. 6. When their visitor had disappeared Jon and his mother stood without speaking, till he said suddenly: "I ought to have seen him out." 7. Don't you think you ought to be here when he comes? 8. They oughtn't to have called me Fleur. 9. Do you think you ought to leave, Father? 10. He ought to see that the door is properly locked every night. 11. I ought to have come first and get the place decently ready for you. 12. You oughtn't to be doing anything like that. 13. You oughtn't to have had anything to do with him. 14. Ought he not to have immediately reported

what he had heard to the police? 15. I'm not going into the reasons, you ought to trust me, Fleur! 16. She ought to have guessed that she couldn't go far in London without being recognized. 17. I ought never to have let you make me those presents. 18. I don't really know whether I ought to say it or not. 19. I confess I ought to have thought of that.

Exercise 18. Comment on the meaning of the verb *should*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. He wondered what he should say if she asked him what the appointment was. 2. I should have hated that, but I enjoyed going there so awfully. 3. You shouldn't go out without an overcoat. 4. If you are interested in pictures you should look in at the British Museum. 5. One shouldn't go from one place to another. 6. She should have married someone with more personality than Billy. 7. You shouldn't have said that, Archie. 8. Perhaps she said things that should have been left unsaid. 9. While you are in our city you should avail yourself of every opportunity to see its wonders. 10. I think you know, that one should have a plan. 11. He was prepared to settle down as a country gentleman, bring up the kids as kids should be brought up. 12. I suppose he shouldn't have touched anything at all. 13. If I don't care, I don't see why you should. 14. You should read a receipt carefully before you sign it. 15. Now she told me exactly what I should say. 16. The Van Dorth Hotel should have been a depressing place, but somehow it wasn't. 17. Do you know that an officer should be with his troops?

Exercise 19. State whether *should* is auxiliary or modal.

1. In his place I should have been more embarrassed and less calm. 2. Eleanor's relations suggested that her husband should go to work rather than live on her money. 3. If Fleur liked to amuse herself by having people round her, why shouldn't she? 4. I should have gone mad if you hadn't let me read the letters. 5. I thought I should never get over it. 6. Philip, you shouldn't speak to your uncle like that. 7. I shouldn't believe it myself if anybody told it to me. 8. We told him we should send him an autographed copy of our report. 9. It should have shown her to him in her true colours.

10. You shouldn't mention this woman and me in the same breath. 11. I was afraid I should miss him. 12. We should go to the Zoo more often, and watch the monkeys. 13. "Are you English or American?" — "English, of course. Should I care about them if I were not?" 14. "Have you seen anybody about it?" — "No. Should I have?"

Exercise 20. Comment on the use of emotional *should*. Pay attention to the structure of the questions it is found in.

1. Why should I tell you a lie? 2. But why should you want to paint me? 3. Why shouldn't you stay with me? 4. Why, where should I be without you? 5. And where should I go then? 6. Why should he have said he found the watch just there? 7. What in God's name should I want that for? 8. Why should I give him his freedom? 9. Why should she buy me clothes? 10. How should I know what's to be done? 11. "Who did it?" the sheriff said. "How should I know who did it?" I said. 12. I have left Soames! Where should I go? 13. Why should I have done that? 14. Why in the world shouldn't you listen to her? 15. "Who is Mrs Thomas?" I asked. — "How should I know?" 16. I said to myself: "Why should I not go and see that poor Strickland?" 17. I don't know what to say except this: Why shouldn't the girl herself have done it? 18. Flight! But why should Bosinney fly? 19. "And who are these?" — "How should I know? It's no business of mine." 20. Why should you be different from other men?

Exercise 21. Pay attention to the use of *should* in its weakened meaning. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. Should you find it necessary to communicate with me, send a message to the postmaster in the village. 2. There was really no reason why he should not start immediately. 3. Philip suggested that they should dine together. 4. They pinched and saved so that I should have enough to live on. 5. I was terrified lest they should notice me. 6. All I propose is that we should be kind to this poor girl. 7. It was an order that she should return to London swiftly. 8. Well, if you should want anything, here's my card. 9. He insisted that they should all have tea together in the kitchen. 10. I don't see why I shouldn't get as much attention as anybody else. 11. Should

you have a few hours to spare? I shall be very happy to see you out here. 12. There was no reason why they shouldn't all three get on very well together. 13. She proposed that he should meet her in the second-class waiting-room at Victoria Station. 14. She gave instructions that the letter should be given to Tom by the maid who awoke him. 15. At length they arranged that he should come on the following Monday at one o'clock. 16. They made me go to the kitchen so that she shouldn't know I was there. 17. Her desire is that they should live together. 18. He did not put the word *Forsyte* on the envelope lest she should tear it up unread. 19. That Fleur should have a declared enemy, powerful in society, filled him with uneasiness. 20. One day he suggested that they should go back to live in Florence.

Exercise 22. Fill in the blanks with the verbs *can, may, must, should, ought, need, have to, be to*.

1. At this time Strickland ... have been nearly forty-seven. 2. "Real friends ... have everything in common," the Miller used to say. 3. Surely he ... have stayed with her on her birthday! 4. She ... never have married him! 5. You ... not bother with these things here for you are among friends. 6. If anything ... happen to me, my wife will be left very badly off. 7. That young American chap ... have overheard something too. 8. Tell him I'd wait twenty years for him if I ... to. 9. This ... be the very last dinner he would ever eat at Ella's. 10. He ... go to business, why ... other people stay in bed merely because it was dark and foggy? 11. I ... have insisted on going by myself and who knows I ... have got a job when I got to London. 12. You ... not be afraid, I never cry. 13. Why ... you and I talk about it? 14. He suggested that I ... stay with him for a few days so that he ... show me something of the surrounding country. 15. It ... be a tiny path, or it ... extend for miles. 16. I think I ... find some girl, who'll just look after me. 17. Well, my dear fellow, you ... not eat as if you were going to eat it all. 18. Harris said there ... have been twenty people following him in all. 19. It was of himself and of his own future, that he ... think. 20. It's not my secret. But I'll see what I ... do, because I think both you and John ... be told. 21. I ... say

that you ... have shown more consideration. 22. It's absurd to have a hard and fast rule about what one ... read and what one ... not.

Exercise 23. Comment on the modal colouring of the following sentences with *shall*.

1. You shall sit by me, and amuse me. 2. At what time shall I be back? 3. Now you shall look on it face to face. 4. You shall listen. 5. Shall I leave the things here, sir? 6. Well, what night shall we go? 7. "You shall see it (the portrait) yourself, tonight!" he cried, seizing a lamp from the table. 8. Shall I tell you why these men could not live with me? 9. If I come there you shall know about it. 10. She shall go off tomorrow, the little artful creature. 11. They shall not touch me ever again. 12. You shall not slip through my fingers. 13. I give you my word, you shall hear from me after the Cabinet meets. 14. I made a mistake about this afternoon. It shall not occur again. You shall enjoy your solitude. 15. Well, if it's twins, doctor, you shall be godfather. 16. "What!" cried Mrs Morel, panting with rage. "You shall not touch him for her telling, you shall not!" 17. I'll tell you the story of my life and you shall tell me all about Buntinghom. — How's that? 18. "You shall have a pony, Henrietta," he said, "and James too, later on." 19. Well, you shall hold my bouquet? 20. Then you shall come; and you will come too, Basil, won't you?

Exercise 24. Comment on the meaning of the verb *will*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. I will be at the Bridge at 9 o'clock. 2. I will give you your tea. 3. Will you all come along? 4. Will you have some more sweets? 5. If you will only hold together and say the same thing he must give way. 6. If you will let us we'll come back when supper's over. 7. You can let Mr Gibson know that I will see him in the morning. 8. I will take care of you, I promise, Megan. 9. You have only to ask me and I will show you the rooms. 10. I will call in and see you again. 11. I tell you, Dora, I won't stand for you. 12. I won't be made a slave to that child! 13. His hair won't stick down though it looks as though he had plastered everything he can think of on it.

14. It's bloody cold and this blasted experiment won't go.
15. There is a chinking of pots from the little kitchen and every now and then either Chris or the Old Lady will march through with something else to put on the table. 16. I'd like you to do something for me, Adrian, if you will. 17. My feet, I can't move them. I feel so damn silly. My feet won't move!
18. "You are not leaving her here?" he protested. — "She won't come." — "Force her, then."

Exercise 25. Fill in the blanks with *shall* or *will*.

1. Can you walk as far as the car or ... I bring it round?
2. I ... not come down with you. I ... go home. 3. If I've got him they can't take him. He ... not go. I ... not let him.
4. You've asked for my opinion and by God you ... have it.
5. Come down and stop frightening us or, by heaven, you ... have no tea. 6. I've never had a ring. There, it ... go over my knuckle. 7. I am going to marry him — of course, if you ... let me. 8. Then you ... send the servants to bed and cook supper for the gentlemen and myself. 9. It's my fault, I ought to have stopped it all. But you ... have your revenge, I promise you that. 10. Let me come in. I ... not say anything, I just want to listen. 11. Then you ... find him for me! 12. "By God, she ... have the part," she said out loud.
13. ... you tell me what belongs to me and what doesn't?

Exercise 26. Comment on the meaning of the verb *would*. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. Then a strange uneasiness would seize the Captain, he would look at his watch and sigh. 2. He wrote to ask me if I would come and give a talk to his class. 3. I tried to speak, but the words wouldn't come. 4. Would you like a drink of water? 5. I gave him books to read, but after a page or two he would put the book down and stare miserably into space. 6. People tried to be kind to her and asked her to stay with them, but she wouldn't. 7. I wish you would tell me what you want. 8. For a moment it seemed as if he would fall forward. Then, recovering, he turned and bowed again. 9. Would you kindly show me that lovely vase? 10. I'd be very glad if you would stay and have a bit of dinner with me. 11. If it would only stop raining for a single day, it wouldn't be so bad.

1. Вам следовало бы принять во внимание все подробности, когда вы обсуждали этот вопрос. 2. Боюсь, что вам придется согласиться на их условия. 3. Наверное, он

106

12. Her pretty flaxen hair would not keep its wave in the heat. 13. Sometimes Mrs Nicholas would send her daughter to the hotel. 14. She gave a frightened movement and clutched the letter to her heart as though I would take it. 15. A year ago I hadn't a relative in the world except two or three that wouldn't speak to me. 16. You are talking like a failure. If you would only make up your mind to try instead of being so damn proud and remote! 17. I wish you wouldn't busy yourself about my affairs.

Exercise 27. Fill in the blanks with *should* or *would*.

1. Was it possible that Dick ... turn his thoughts from his work? 2. I ... not have spoken of it, only you seemed so keen about it. 3. I swore that I forgave her everything, but she ... not listen! 4. If you ... not mind I ... like to come. 5. When he grew blind he ... sit hour after hour in those two rooms that he had painted, looking at his works with sightless eyes. 6. She clenched her teeth so that she ... not cry. 7. Her eager wish was that he ... love her. 8. I wish you ... go away now. 9. It was natural that I ... take chances. 10. Why ... the people be operated on without an anaesthetic? 11. "I wish you ... not wear those great horn spectacles," he said. "I don't know why a pretty woman ... do her best to look plain." 12. For a long time sleep ... not come. 13. I did not want to discuss it with anyone, lest I ... be confused again. 14. Sometimes we ... simply drink tea and talk like friends. 15. You ... never neglect a chance, however small it may seem. 16. As Paul walked along the north side of a certain street, what ... he see but the truly beautiful and remarkable eyes of Lena. 17. I ... like you to call me Eliza now, if you ... 18. I ... be very much obliged if you ... have a talk to him. 19. It was arranged by the Entertainment Committee that there ... be a Christmas Tree for the children. 20. I asked him one or two questions but he ... not answer. 21. I wanted to refresh my memory so that I ... be in a position to tell you everything you wanted to know. 22. ... we talk Italian? ... you mind very much?

Exercise 28. Translate the sentences into English using modal verbs.

1. Вам следовало бы принять во внимание все подробности, когда вы обсуждали этот вопрос. 2. Боюсь, что вам придется согласиться на их условия. 3. Наверное, он

106

испугал вас своими угрозами. 4. Если бы мы не вмешались, они, возможно, поссорились бы. 5. Не может быть, чтобы он придумал это сам. 6. Когда должен начаться концерт? — В 7 часов. 7. Право же, вы могли бы подумать о других! 8. Я обещаю, что все будет сделано. Не нужно беспокоиться. 9. С какой стати я буду ему первая звонить? 10. Дети пытались открыть дверь, но она никак не открывалась. 11. Лжецу следовало бы иметь хорошую память. 12. Ах, если бы только я могла предвидеть это! 13. Вы не захотели последовать моему совету — теперь пеняйте на себя. 14. Вся жизнь мальчика может быть исковеркана, если вы не увезете его отсюда. 15. Вы, должно быть, многое повидали в жизни, хотя вы и гораздо моложе меня. 16. Неужели он действительно отказался вам помочь? 17. Ты никуда не пойдешь, пока не сделаешь уроки! 18. Доктор велел ей лежать, но она и слышать об этом не хотела. 19. Он предложил, чтобы собрание назначили на пять часов. 20. Замок никак не закрывается! Ты мог бы починить его в конце концов! 21. Приди он к нам еще раз, мы бы и говорить с ним не стали. 22. Я сделаю вас счастливой. Вы будете делать, что хотите, и тратить, сколько угодно.

Verbals

INFINITIVE

Exercise 1. Comment on the form of the infinitive.

a) 1. You must be careful with Dinny. 2. "Come along, Imogen," said Winifred, "we must be getting back." 3. You must have noticed her there. 4. The whole thing must have been going on under her eyes! 5. She's like a beautiful exotic flower that must be sheltered from bitter winds. 6. This meeting, Edwina realized, must have been planned several hours ago.

b) 1. I want to know how long we are expected to wait. 2. He seemed to be weighing something in his mind. 3. You know how I hate to interfere in other people's business. 4. First I considered myself to be standing high and lean,

very fair, with a straight wide mouth. 5. Was the object attached to anything? No wires or anything? I mean, someone couldn't have been having a joke or something? 6. He seemed to have taken his defeat quietly. 7. I rang the bell of the dependable family, and the man answered with remarkable promptness; he seemed to have been waiting for it to ring. 8. Martin had in the meantime made himself as comfortable as circumstances would permit.

Exercise 2. Define noun and verb characteristics of the infinitive.

1. Mr Gordon began to breathe heavily. 2. The Farrells like to tell jokes. 3. "She must have been combing her hair," she said, "when they came for her." 4. I haven't meant to scold and don't expect to be scolded. 5. He demanded to be taken to see the baby. 6. Could you ask him to come as soon as he can? 7. To hear him talk is an education in itself. 8. There's nothing to be done with her. 9. Well, I think we ought to be starting. 10. I cannot imagine why you should ever have been prevented from seeing the baby. 11. Jimmie tells me he is prepared to sign the statement. 12. They must be intending to go for a swim. 13. You might have thought of Miguel. 14. Our task is to master English.

Exercise 3. Insert the infinitive with the particle to before it where necessary.

1. She began (to talk) of Moscow. 2. I don't want them (to think) you in the wrong. 3. It was a command from her mother, and there was nothing for her (to do) but (to obey) it. 4. You must (to take) care not (to offend) her. 5. I'd rather not (to go) home that way. 6. "I think we'd better (to go) and (to get) dry," he said. 7. I stood by the door and watched him (to take) the drinks over to Wells. 8. "Do you want (to write)?" — "Of course." — "Then why not (to write) it?" 9. It heartened Mary (to hear) him (to speak) so lightly. 10. How dare you (to interfere) with my private concerns? No, don't speak. Don't try (to excuse) yourself. 11. Liza felt herself (to grow) red to the tips of her toes. 12. I had not seen Jimmie (to lose) his temper before. 13. Mrs Carey rose (to help) her (to lay) the cloth. 14. Why not (to make) him a doctor like his father? 15. He would never cease (to regret)

his lost opportunities. 16. I want (to begin) (to earn) my corn. 17. I used (to spend) a lot of time in Robinson's rooms. 18. He never let himself (to be) angry.

Exercise 4. Use the required form of the infinitive in brackets. Insert the particle to where necessary.

1. I want (to go) to the East. 2. That was the last thing she expected (to hear) him (to say). 3. At that hour she was unaccustomed (to disturb) by anyone. 4. She could not let herself (to cry). 5. He wished (to make) the most of his opportunity. 6. He seemed (to think) over what he wanted (to say). 7. I watched the shore (to come) close, then (to swing) away, then (to come) closer. 8. He wants (to congratulate) you in person. 9. "As soon as Joe gets here," Mel instructed, "I want (to notify) wherever I am." 10. The question is, what had I better (to do) with this house? 11. Wrap up my lunch, child. I must (to go) now. 12. He doesn't like (to keep) waiting. 13. I don't like (to see) men (to cry). I don't even like (to see) women or babies (to cry). 14. I hate (to leave) our fine house. 15. They do nothing but (to talk) about it all day long. 16. There was nothing (to do) but (to knit) all day long. 17. His face showed his grief and how upset he was, and his eyes seemed (to ask) for consolation. 18. He had felt that they should (to bring) up by their mother. 19. But he dared not (to ask) what was in her mind. 20. He felt that her friends ought (to choose) for her. 21. "We're just going in," he said to Bosinney. "You'd better (to come) back to dinner with us." 22. The street and house were quiet, but from St Charles Avenue and beyond could (to hear) distant sounds of the awakening city. 23. I have never heard anyone but them (to do) so.

Exercise 5. Use the required form of the infinitive in brackets. Insert the particle to where necessary.

1. I decided (to make) a fuss, and went (to look) for Robinson. 2. We walked to the door and I saw her (to go) in and down the hall. I liked (to watch) her (to move). 3. Let's (to go) and (to find) him, he's sure (to be) in front of his picture. 4. It's very interesting (to hear) you (to say) that. 5. Some important decisions must (to make) soon. 6. You must (to do) something

heroic at that time. 7. I think he must (to suffer) from injury now. 8. You must (to dream) of it long. 9. She liked, passionately (to like), (to think) worthy of confidence. 10. Let me (to hold) the baby, Scarlett. Oh, I know how (to hold) babies. 11. She noticed that he seemed (to look) at the sideboard and with her engaging smile leaned forward. 12. Do you want (to make) something (to happen)? 13. But there is something else (to do). 14. I have not done much for you. You might (to ask) much more at that time. 15. "If you've got nothing to say," I said, "why (to try) (to say) it? Why not (to have) a little rest?" 16. There was one more announcement (to make).

Exercise 6. State the syntactic function of the infinitive.

1. He began to describe in detail the beauties of the picture. 2. She did not trouble to put on a hat. 3. To dine there on a June evening was a delight. 4. The only thing she could do was to give advice. 5. We used to spend a lot of time in a Greek club. 6. They planned to spend their two weeks' summer holiday in London. 7. I'd better come round and see what I can do for you. 8. He had other things to think of. 9. His boots stood in front of the fire to warm. 10. She was silent as they continued to walk. 11. Harry refused to go with them. 12. It is depressing to read about depression. 13. You'd better go home and talk it over with your husband. 14. He was not the man to take back the offer he had made. 15. I don't think I look strong enough to drag a baby up the mountain. 16. I know I ought not to have come here. 17. He was too timid to speak. 18. She hurried away to fetch an egg. 19. Our aim was to find Robinson's house. 20. I don't want to quarrel with you. 21. His pipe ceased to draw. 22. I nodded and tried to look pleased. 23. I think the pain is going to start again at any minute.

Exercise 7. Translate the sentences into Russian, using the infinitive from the following list as:

a) subject

to repair, to hear, to speak, to wait, to search

1. He went off. ... for him now was a torture. 2. It was impossible ... the bicycle. 3. It took us twelve days ... the island. 4. At this moment, ... required more effort than she could make. 5. It is such a comfort ... you say so, doctor.

b) predicative

to go on, to try, to tell, to return, to keep

1. My next plan was ... to the house, avoiding Wells if possible. 2. My advice to you is ... a coach tour. 3. The only thing she could do was ... the truth. 4. The greatest thing is ... our heads up. 5. There was no water nearby and the only thing was ... to find it somewhere.

c) object

to air, to see, to show, to join, to be surprised

1. He promised ... us all of the island. 2. I must tell Ellen ... the drawing-room very well tomorrow. 3. I was so relieved that I forgot ... by her speaking. 4. He asked me ... his party. 5. Philip was not sorry ... him off.

d) attribute

to do, to say, to waste, to make, to arrive

1. There's nothing else 2. They had very little 3. There were no objections ... that you could put your finger on. 4. He was nearly the last 5. You see I have no time

e) adverbial modifier of result

to give, to believe, to go, to shut, to waste

1. You're too young ... the door on life. 2. She was well enough ... to visit Henry in the sanatorium. 3. It's too good a story 4. The very names of the chapters were enough ... one a headache. 5. You're too good ... me.

f) adverbial modifier of purpose

to spend, to see, to keep, to fetch, to have

1. Jennie had driven off next day ... the twins from a swimming-pool near by. 2. "Hallo, Marjie," I said. "Have you come ... me company?" 3. I arrived on a Saturday afternoon ... a week there. 4. He invited them to the flat one evening ... coffee. 5. Sometimes people came from London especially ... the Black Madonna.

Exercise 8. Use the particle *to* to avoid repetition of the infinitive used in the first part of the sentence.

Model: "Don't talk," he told her. "Unless you want to talk."
"Don't talk," he told her. "Unless you want to."

1. She liked all this kind of thing. Some people pretended not to like. 2. "You live round there, do you?" — "I used to live round there," said Rose. 3. "May I sit down for a minute?" —

"If you want to sit down." 4. "May I come in?" he asked. — "Yes, if you want to come in." 5. After all there's no reason why I shouldn't go if I want to go. 6. "I'm sorry; was I making a speed?" — "You were beginning to make a speed." 7. "Why did she come back?" — "I suppose she wanted to come back," said Michael and giggled. 8. "Can I really stay?" — "If you really want to stay," I said kindly. 9. "They oughtn't to let her run around the country this way." — "Who oughtn't to let her run round the country this way?" 10. It was the last thing she wanted to do, but she saw that she would have to do.

Exercise 9. Combine each of the following pairs of sentences into one using an infinitive or an infinitive phrase in the function of an adverbial modifier of purpose instead of the second sentence.

1. When he left Mrs Otter Philip went. She wanted to buy drawing materials. 2. At last Lawson, exhausted, got up. He decided to go home. 3. It occurred to him that his information might be used. He wanted to help the girl. 4. So I went up to the counter and collected Octavia's penicillin, then went back. I decided to sit and wait with George. 5. I read about your stow away and came. I wanted to see if I could help. 6. He made up his mind. He decided to be more reasonable. 7. He left the room. He wanted to avoid trouble. 8. He looked at me. He wanted to see what I meant. 9. Then she looked up and down at the Westminster Bridge Road. She wanted to see if he was in view. 10. His niece put her face up. She wanted to be kissed.

Exercise 10. Combine each of the following pairs of sentences into one sentence using the infinitive in the function of an adverbial modifier of result. Use the adverbs *too* or *enough* where necessary.

Model: He is old. He can be your father.

He is old enough to be your father.

1. He felt excited. He couldn't sleep. 2. I'm weak. I can't help you. 3. I was tired. I couldn't go up to the dining-room. 4. The room was stuffy with the window closed, but I was tired. I couldn't get up and open it. 5. He was angry. He couldn't care what he did. 6. His influence with Dunsford was strong. He could get him to take tea elsewhere. 7. Her

neck was still strong. She could held her head high. 8. He was good. He said that he knew no one who combined those qualities to so high a degree as I do. 9. They sucked their teeth automatically at us and then realized that we were tired. We couldn't be annoyed by it. 10. Her husband had been a soldier, and from a grateful country she received a pension. It was large to keep her.

Exercise 11. Replace the subordinate attributive clause by an infinitive in the function of an attribute.

Model: I had avoided the house all day and had brought food that we could eat by the lake.

I had avoided the house all day and had brought food to eat by the lake.

1. Thank you very much, but I've got something better I can do with my time. 2. There was nothing else we could do. 3. He might have something he wanted to tell her. 4. I just want to look round and see if there's anything that can be done. 5. Scarlett, I have something so important I want to tell you that I hardly know how to say it. 6. At the end of the year there was a great deal we had to do. 7. There was nothing more that could be done here. 8. There are various things we must discuss. 9. Everything was all right, there wasn't a thing one could find fault with. 10. I've got a suggestion I can make to you.

Exercise 12. Paraphrase the following sentences according to the model. Translate them into Russian.

Model: I turned round indignantly to find myself face to face with Miss Peabody.

I turned round indignantly and found myself face to face with Miss Peabody.

1. He arrived at three o'clock to hear that Fleur had gone out with the car at ten. 2. Startled, he looked up to find her smiling. 3. The cigarette glowed and faded, only to glow again. 4. The door opened to reveal Albert Wells. He was fully dressed. 5. He rose, to find Janet and the captain standing beside him. 6. She was startled to hear an unknown voice. 7. He arrived at eleven o'clock to see that all was ready. 8. We were out for a few moments only, to take a walk around

the block, and we returned to supper. 9. He smiled to think how the silvery noise which Mr Casey used to make had deceived him. 10. Late on the morning of Christmas Eve I returned from the Falls to find a crowd of natives quarrelling outside the garage.

Exercise 13. Replace the infinitive used in the function of an attribute by an attributive clause.

Model: Probably there's nothing to do.

Probably there's nothing that we can do.

1. I had apparently nothing to fear. 2. "Did they give you anything to drink?" I said. 3. Her parents were away from home, so there would be nobody to look after her. 4. I should have thought it would be more to the point to get up and enjoy a splendid day. 5. It was not the thing to say. 6. Well, there is nothing to see inside. 7. There was nothing else to do. 8. She found no one to admire.

Exercise 14. Replace the infinitive used in the function of an adverbial modifier by a simple sentence.

1. I stopped every few minutes to recover from my coughing. 2. He joined Jennie and the children on the doorstep to wave good-bye. 3. They went to sleep and were quite good afterwards. 4. When Jennie returned, Simon leapt off to wash. 5. Mrs Jan Cloote put down her cup and looked round the room to see if everyone had unfortunately heard me. 6. After that we went to a house to meet a lot of Curly's friends. 7. He left there and went back to the house to get his camera. 8. We took turns to prepare meals. 9. Tom Wells came to meet us.

Exercise 15. Translate into English. Use the infinitive in the function of:

a) subject

1. Идти в кино было слишком поздно. 2. Тщетно было пытаться сделать это за один день. 3. Моей обязанностью было готовить чай по утрам и вечерам. 4. Из моей комнаты было невозможно не слышать все то, что происходило на улице. 5. Было очень приятно надеть еще раз серую рубашку.

b) object

1. Не забудьте принять таблетки от головной боли. 2. Они надеялись найти Тома в бассейне, а его там не оказа-

дось. 3. Он пригласил своих друзей прийти посмотреть его новую квартиру. 4. Он дал Филиппу свой адрес, и Филипп обещал пообедать с ним в следующее воскресенье в час. 5. Я решил поехать в Москву вместе с родителями.

c) attribute

1. Я тебе должен что-то показать. 2. Он работал хорошо и легко. У него было много дел. 3. Ничего не оставалось делать, как только ждать прихода родителей. 4. У него были дети, о которых он должен был заботиться. 5. Кто-то должен первым начать говорить. 6. Они первыми приехали, следовательно, первыми и уедут. 7. У него было много новостей, которые он должен был немедленно сообщить Ральфу. 8. У него был небольшой багаж, который следовало упаковать. 9. Вы выглядите очень больным. Есть кто-нибудь, кто бы мог за вами ухаживать здесь? 10. Ей нечего было сказать.

d) adverbial modifier of result

1. Она была слишком удивлена, чтобы говорить об этом. 2. Он достаточно умен, чтобы понять вашу шутку. 3. Ему достаточно много лет, чтобы быть моим дедушкой. 4. Я слишком слаба, чтобы идти туда одной. 5. Он достаточно здоров, чтобы кататься на лыжах. 6. Он достаточно опытен, чтобы выполнить эту работу в срок.

e) adverbial modifier of purpose

1. Я пришел, чтобы убедиться, смогу ли я помочь вам. 2. Он встал, чтобы уйти. 3. Она отошла назад, чтобы посмотреть на свою работу. 4. Пойдите и найдите кого-нибудь еще, кто мог бы помочь вам. 5. Понадобилось пятнадцать минут, чтобы исследовать второй тоннель. 6. «Что вы здесь делаете?» — «Я пришла искать вас». 7. Он подошел к детям, чтобы попрощаться. 8. Он улыбнулся ей и пошел помогать Тому упаковывать вещи. 9. Мы ушли в другую комнату, чтобы посмотреть их библиотеку.

Exercise 16. Translate into English.

1. Вам лучше подождать здесь. 2. Я думала, что вы, может быть, не хотите, чтобы с вами говорили. 3. Последним, кто приехал, был мой отец. 4. О таких вещах нельзя говорить. 5. У нее была привычка приходить ко

мне каждое утро и спрашивать, что я хочу на завтрак. 6. Почему за ним нельзя послать? 7. Это, кажется, просто сделать. 8. С ним нельзя было шутить. 9. Очень холодно. Я лучше закрою окно. 10. Том не спешил с ответом. 11. Вам лучше не ходить туда одной. 12. Филипп разрешил дяде поцеловать его в лоб. 13. Она предполагала, что ее будут ругать, когда она вошла, так как было слишком поздно. 14. Подождите, пожалуйста, я должна вам что-то рассказать. 15. Рассказ был слишком хорош, чтобы его так быстро забыть. 16. Она вошла, и он встал, чтобы встретить ее. 17. Я хочу, чтобы меня оставили одного. 18. Он снял очки, чтобы их протереть. 19. Он был недостаточно взрослым, чтобы понять этот рассказ. 20. У него было желание поехать на юг к друзьям. 21. Они уехали последними. 22. Джек посмотрел на Тома, чтобы понять, как он воспринял эти новости. 23. За ним послали, но он приехал слишком поздно, чтобы сделать что-либо полезное. 24. Они продолжали сидеть и разговаривать почти до полуночи. Том, который жил дальше всех, ушел первым. 25. Она тихо вошла, чтобы сказать, что Джейн уже приехала. 26. Он получил письмо от Джеймса, в котором сообщалось, что его сестра была недостаточно здорова, чтобы самой писать ответ. 27. На следующий день она встала рано, чтобы приготовить комнату к приезду сына. 28. Он подошел достаточно близко, чтобы увидеть ее лицо. 29. Она вошла, чтобы накрыть на стол. 30. Спустя десять дней она была достаточно здорова, чтобы выписаться из больницы.

Exercise 17. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. She is not to be allowed on any flight, no matter what she says. 2. "Am I to come home?" he asked. 3. He made out a list of books which Philip was to read. 4. Sandy was to leave Edinburgh at the end of the year. 5. I was to meet him that night, a Saturday. 6. The telephone call was to be from Jonathan on Monday. 7. I don't have to be told who she was. 8. But something had to be done. 9. I did not have much to put in my bag. 10. "I'm afraid I shall have to go in a minute," she said. "I'm late already." 11. There are things that have to be done. 12. "Well, I'll have to go when your parents come back," said Lydia.

Exercise 18. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. You don't know how charming he was in those days, so good to look at, so gay and light-hearted. 2. It is true that, with Robinson's system, the place was easy to run. 3. His head was hot to touch. 4. You're easy to please. 5. Yet under those circumstances his silence seemed difficult to explain.

Exercise 19. Translate into English.

1. Ему трудно угодить. 2. В этом доме было удобно жить. 3. На него было не очень приятно смотреть. 4. С ней было трудно иметь дело. 5. Это стихотворение легко выучить наизусть. 6. За этим столом удобно работать.

Exercise 20. Complete the sentences choosing a suitable infinitive phrase from the following list:

when to come, how to phrase, how to keep, how to handle, what to do, which to choose, where to put, whether to stay here or go back, where to go, what to say

1. He asked his mother ... back. 2. We know ... snow and ice; we live with it. 3. There were a lot of books on the shelves. We did not know 4. We were not sure 5. Show me please 6. I did not know ... the baby warm. 7. She did not Her head swam and she was afraid she was going to faint. 8. I was helping her to put away the clean linen. She was telling me ... it. 9. He did not know ... his faith in her. 10. I'm so bewildered, I don't know

Exercise 21. Translate into English.

1. В машине они обсудили, что делать дальше. 2. Мы сомневались, послать ли ему письмо или телеграмму. 3. Она сказала шоферу, куда ехать. 4. Я не знаю, когда мне следует возвращаться. 5. Я не знала, в какую сторону смотреть. 6. Он совсем не знал, как начать письмо. 7. Я не знаю, что и подумать о нем. 8. Он не знал, что сказать. 9. Он не знал, как начать разговор.

Exercise 22. Make up sentences using the following infinitive phrases:

what to do, what to say, how to say, how to take, how to dress, how to keep, how to speak, how to stand, how to use, how to behave, which to take, where to go, when to come, what to say.

SYNTACTICAL COMPLEXES WITH THE INFINITIVE

Exercise 23. Note the complex object with the infinitive and the verbs it is used after. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. There's some information I want you to obtain.
2. He liked to see them work. 3. Let's get to the point. 4. Oh, Jack, you made me start. 5. I don't want them to say anything to me. 6. James watched her go. 7. She gave a meaningful sigh which made him drive all the faster. 8. I was dusting the saloon, and I saw him pass, and his face was white. 9. Lawson nodded quickly and walked away. Philip felt a shiver pass his heart. 10. He watched them go. 11. He let them go. 12. He saw the pain come into Lawson's eyes.

Exercise 24. Paraphrase the following using complex objects with the infinitive.

Model: She watched how he went.
She watched him go.

1. He heard how one of the other girls in the shop addressed Jane. 2. He felt that the eyes of his fellow-students rested on him. 3. She saw that the door of the sitting-room opened and her mother entered. 4. What I want is that your uncle shouldn't be left alone. 5. She smiled when she heard how he locked the door loudly. 6. What she wanted was that he would come and see her. 7. Jack watched how Eliza leave, then he walked slowly down the hall to his father's room. 8. I've never heard him how he spoke of his life in Canada.

Exercise 25. Make up sentences with complex objects with the infinitive. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. speak, I, have heard, of his boyhood, never, him. 2. swing, at once, open, the door, I, saw. 3. about something, I, quite different, me, you, want, to tell. 4. you, don't, worry, that, let. 5. what, this, her, say, made? 6. without, her, let, my sister, go, a word. 7. young, her long hair, made, look, her.

Exercise 26. Translate into English.

1. Разрешите, пожалуйста, взять эту книгу сейчас. 2. Он не ожидал, что я так быстро уйду. 3. Она слышала, как уехала его машина. 4. Она наблюдала, как он вышел из

дома. 5. Его письма обычно заставляли ее смеяться. 6. Давайте пойдем домой. 7. Она бы хотела, чтобы я навестила их в воскресенье. 8. Она слышала, как подъехала машина. 9. Она пыталась заставить его носить перчатки. 10. Она видела, как Том вышел из ворот вместе со своей сестрой. 11. Вам нужно позаботиться о муже и не разрешать ему слишком много работать. 12. Трудно заставить его понять это. 13. Я в жизни не слышал, чтобы он так много говорил. 14. Он наблюдал, как жена налила ему кофе и поставила чашку на стол. 15. Я хочу, чтобы вы рассказали мне что-нибудь о своих родителях. 16. Я видела, что Женни упаковала ящик. 17. Эрик отошел в сторону и наблюдал, как мы разжигали костер. 18. Вы хотите, чтобы я пошла туда сейчас? 19. Я видела, что он повернулся к Джейн и что-то ей сказал. 20. Спустя некоторое время он слышал, как входная дверь открылась и закрылась. 21. Вы хотите, чтобы я сказала ему об этом сегодня? 22. Он никогда не слышал, чтобы она упоминала его имя.

Exercise 27. Note the complex subject with the infinitive and the verb it is used after. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. He was seen to cross the street and turn round the corner. 2. She was heard to breathe heavily. 3. He was made to eat a Chester cake and was spoken to in a slightly more Edinburgh way than usual. 4. He is said to be one of the best students at our faculty. 5. She was reported to have been very faithful to her friends. She knew everybody she wished to know and everybody was pleased to know her. 6. When he recovered he was allowed to ski every Sunday. 7. Her retirement was rather a tragedy, she was forced to retire before time. 8. "Miss Brodie is ill," said Miss Ellen. — "Yes," said Miss Guant, "she is expected to be absent for another week." 9. He always appeared to be so helpful on the committees, so considerate. 10. His pockets turned out to contain nothing except a packet of Turkish cigarettes, which he usually smoked. 11. He happened to be her brother-in-law. 12. He proved to be their devoted friend. 13. He seemed to know her thoughts. 14. Father and Dr Pearson are sure to get into one of their chess games, and when they do that anyone else might just as well not be there. 15. At any moment the boys were likely to be away.

Exercise 28. Paraphrase the following sentences using the complex subject with the infinitive.

a) 1. He marched out into the hall. She heard him lift the receiver and give the number. 2. He did not expect her to write often, for he knew that letter-writing came difficult to her. 3. He saw those three return together from the other room and pass back along the far side of the screen. 4. "Oh, I didn't hear you come in." — "I came to see if I could be of any help to you," said Race. 5. A voice on the stairs behind made us all start. 6. He made the boy take off his boot and stocking.

b) 1. It seemed that her dinner party went on too long to her, as it did to you. 2. It seemed that she sensed the purpose of his question. 3. It seemed that he did not notice that I was in outdoor clothes. 4. "It seems that you know a lot of Robinson," Tom Wells observed. 5. It was so wonderful to see old George. It seems he needs a friend.

c) 1. It appeared that George was talking to Mr Smiss persuasively. 2. "I don't think you should blame yourself." It appeared that the man had not heard. He went on as if in a daze. 3. When she passed by it appeared that they looked at her attentively. 4. It appeared that they were coming down when I left the room. 5. It appeared that he did not see at all why he should explain his disappearance.

d) 1. It was likely that he had hidden my journal under his mattress. 2. It was unlikely that she would come across him by accident. 3. It is quite likely that a motor containing two boys has been noticed. 4. It is unlikely that he will come and see us soon. 5. I think, it is likely Peter will make that mistake.

e) 1. It is believed that John has arrived in London. 2. It is known that Jack is good at painting. 3. It is reported that the spaceship has landed successfully. 4. It is believed he is clever. 5. They say that he is the best teacher at our school.

f) 1. It happened that his father came. It was raining and he had not been able to play golf, and he and Walter Fane had a long chat. 2. It happened that everybody had taken the problem seriously. 3. It happened that I saw them at the theatre. 4. It happened that I mentioned your brother's name. 5. It happened that I knew Eliza's brother well.

Exercise 29. Translate into English.

1. Говорят, что он лучший доктор в нашем городе.
2. Видели, как он перевернул страницу и начал читать.
3. Слышали, что он вскоре поднялся наверх. 4. Вам разрешат идти вместе со мной? 5. Джейн, кажется, раньше, чем вы, изъявила желание помочь им. 6. Многие из пассажиров, по-видимому, были туристами. 7. Они сказали, что подобное вряд ли случается дважды. 8. По-видимому, он собирается стать врачом. 9. Детям не разрешалось трогать кроликов. 10. Оказалось, что я его хорошо знаю. 11. С того времени вы, кажется, очень сильно изменились. 12. Слышали, как хлопнула входная дверь. 13. Предполагалось, что мы встретимся в шесть часов около школы. 14. Улицы города были пусты. По-видимому, все местное население ушло в лес. 15. Казалось, что они уже совсем его забыли. 16. Вероятно, она была единственным человеком, который останется здесь навсегда. 17. Видели, как сверкнули его глаза, но он ничего не сказал. 18. Он, по-видимому, шел за ней, но через некоторое время отстал и пошел к бабушке. 19. Я, кажется, хорошо знаю вас. Я, должно быть, встречал вас у своих родителей. 20. Очень вероятно, что они будут благодарить меня за эту помощь. 21. Кажется, вы много знаете об этом городе. 22. Слышали, как открылась дверь и кто-то вошел в комнату. 23. Случилось так, что меня не было дома, когда он звонил. 24. Когда он говорил, он, кажется, больше говорил себе, чем им. 25. Слышали, как он играл на рояле и что-то пел. 26. Случилось так, что я сказал, что вы знаете его. 27. Он, кажется, также помогает и другим студентам. 28. По-видимому, она согласилась поехать на экскурсию в Ясную Поляну. 29. Я не знала, что существование подземных каналов предполагалось держать в секрете. 30. Казалось, что Александр хотел задать еще вопрос, но, по-видимому, изменил свое намерение.

Exercise 30. State the syntactic functions of the *for-to*-infinitive phrase.

1. On the first occasion it was necessary for him to indicate his requirements to her. 2. The top of this was covered with a thin layer of soil and coarse grass and shaded with

young trees. There was not enough soil for them to grow to any height. 3. He waited impatiently for Eliza to go on. 4. There is nothing for you to do but leave at once. 5. The best thing is for you to do it now. 6. She spread jam for him and cut up the bread and butter into convenient slices for the child to eat.

Exercise 31. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use *for-to-infinitive* phrases.

1. Sandy stood at the kitchen door waiting till Miss Brodie came for a walk by the sea. 2. It is time that you should go, Tom. 3. There was nobody who she could speak to. 4. A peasant was walking wearily towards us, and we waited till he came up to us in order to ask the way again. 5. Janet sat and waited till they went away. 6. She then sat down in Mrs Anthony's chair and waited till the kettle boiled. 7. Was it possible that she could forget him? 8. Then she made her way to the kitchen where the tray had been set by Mrs Anthony and waited till Mrs Pettigrew made the tea. 9. He waited till she spoke.

Exercise 32. Complete the following sentences using *for-to-infinitive* phrases.

1. They waited at the door for (she) ... 2. It is necessary for (he) ... 3. There was no reason for (she) ... 4. It was obligatory for (they) ... 5. There were no friends for (he) ... 6. There is nothing for (you) ... 7. She played the violin for (they) ... 8. It seemed strange for (they) ... 9. It is desirable for (Pete) ... 10. It is advisable for (they) ...

Exercise 33. Translate the following sentences into English.

1. Она позвонила, чтобы они навестили ее в начале сентября. 2. Джейн была очень рада, что может поехать отдыхать со своей сестрой. 3. Она говорила достаточно громко, чтобы все могли ее хорошо слышать. 4. Она ждала, пока Анна вернется с прогулки. 5. Она ждала, пока муж заплатит за такси. 6. В восемь часов дети вошли, чтобы сказать спокойной ночи, и подошли к матери, чтобы она могла их поцеловать. 7. Моим друзьям было трудно

успевать за мной. 8. Он позвонил, чтобы сестра пригласила нового пациента. 9. Мне трудно подниматься по лестнице.

GERUND

Exercise 1. Define noun and verb characteristics of the gerund.

1. It's natural living like this alone with Nature. 2. Keeping his secret won't do any harm. 3. All I want is getting to the truth. 4. He had great difficulty in undoing his collar. 5. He did not like the idea of her staying with her father's people in Capetown. 6. I don't feel comfortable at Miss Brown's leaving us so soon. 7. He was good at gathering mushrooms. 8. I kept walking quickly. 9. He was aware of Jack's watching him attentively. 10. Raymond did not like being called Ray. 11. It was some time before I remembered having met him on the Liston plane. 12. She smiled without showing her teeth.

Exercise 2. Use the indefinite gerund of the verb in brackets in the active or passive voice.

1. He looked forward to (to meet) his parents. 2. You can't be afraid of (to hurt) unless you've been hurt. 3. He took his time about (to answer). 4. Robinson could not live in the caves. They aren't for (to live). They're for (to go) through. 5. But in fear of (to recognize) she lowered her gaze. 6. So I see. You're good at (to make) yourself at home. 7. Jack would have gone to his bedroom without (to see). 8. My sister would never leave without (to see) me. 9. Jennie sat them up to their dinner, and Jeff presently stopped (to cry). 10. She couldn't help (to like) the look in his brown eyes. 11. He had got out of the habit of (to ask) questions by demonstrators. 12. I've always liked (to take) risks. 13. I seem to remember (to tell) not to grumble by someone. 14. She had not even got round to (to ask) for anything yet, because she was too busy to tell him about her granddaughter. 15. At his departure Rose had continued to weep, largely through fury at (to leave) alone with Nurse Williams.

Exercise 3. Use the required form of the gerund of the verb in brackets.

1. She didn't feel like (to go) unescorted into dinner, which would begin soon. 2. I inquired of Robinson that afternoon about my book. He neither admitted nor denied (to take) it. 3. Since Tom was his best friend he helped him without (to ask). 4. His latest desire was to discover her age, which he cursed himself for not (to observe) when he had her passport in his hands. 5. He could not help (to know) that there were odious people who called him a snob. 6. Daisy and Gatsby danced. I remember (to be) surprised by his graceful, conservative fox-trot — I had never seen him dance before. 7. When they had finished (to write) this letter they read the whole correspondence from beginning to end. 8. He would never forgive her for (to play) this game, for over fifty years. 9. He poured milk into a jug from a carton in the refrigerator, then drank some milk himself before (to put) the carton back. 10. It's no good (to deny) that. 11. Try and help the nurses by (to keep) quiet and tidy. 12. From there he had a clear view of the entrance to the room, with the advantage that he could avoid (to observe) himself by (to run) quickly out of sight through the stairway door. 13. The tables were put on one side so that there might be room for (to dance). 14. I don't like (to spy) on. 15. Annette, who heard thousands of names mentioned every year, and had a deplorable memory, could recall (to hear) the name of Fox in connection with something or other, but could not remember exactly what. 16. The porter, also on (to enter), would have tapped out his own code. 17. He suddenly stopped (to read). There was no point in (to go) on. He looked up and found forty pairs of eyes fixed on him intently. 18. You must excuse me for (to think) you were a gipsy.

Exercise 4. State the syntactic function of the gerund.

1. It's no use doing things by halves. 2. She kept eyeing Henry with interest. 3. He didn't feel like talking to anyone now. 4. I could not help thinking of the island in this anatomical way. 5. After pausing for breath she announced, "I have some excellent news." 6. She explained this to them by saying she was busy. 7. She asked her one or two questions. Kitty answered them without knowing what they

meant. 8. The land was the one thing in the world worth fighting for. 9. After a moment, everyone started talking again. 10. Jennie was busy all next day preparing for a cocktail-party. 11. He supposed it was the civilized way of doing things. 12. She waited a minute or two before speaking. 13. Julie expressed horror at the very thought of going out into the cold. 14. I could not answer for coughing. 15. House-keeping with Lidia worked quite well. 16. "A mule would be useful for crossing the mountain," I observed.

Exercise 5. Use the gerund from the following list as:

a) subject

continuing, going, riding, keeping, finding

1. Robinson thought at the time that ... a journal would be an occupation for my mind. 2. My brother always said that ... is the best exercise. 3. I'm afraid it's no use ... this discussion. 4. It's no use ... over old ground. 5. ... him there surprised me greatly.

b) direct object

sitting, opening, hearing, being, doing

1. I remember ... her complain to Joe. 2. The box was stoutly made and resisted 3. I intend ... it tomorrow. 4. Would you mind ... over here? 5. Now I had resolved, if possible, to avoid ... alone with any of these men, these strangers.

c) prepositional object

shaking, stopping, calling, getting, drinking, missing, dealing, being, saying, twisting

1. She was afraid of ... Miller in the crowd. 2. He was fond of ...: "The superstition of today is the science of yesterday." 3. Thank you for 4. On the way home Sally insisted on ... in front of our college. 5. I am assure you I am quite capable of ... with the matter. 6. After that, of course, I had difficulty in ... off Tom Wells. 7. I am sick and tired of ... tea without milk. 8. Surely that prevents the day from ... ordinary. 9. They were certainly clever at ... one's remarks.

d) attribute

eating, coming, getting, reading, going, greeting, discussing

1. The surgery opened at five-thirty, and I made a point of ... along there quite promptly. 2. The only way of ... to the dance was on our bicycles. 3. They talked and laughed

and shouted, and there was the clatter of knives and forks, and strange sounds of 4. Philip had few friends. His habit of ... isolated him. 5. He could not bear the thought of ... his situation. 6. There were cries of ... from a dozen voices and they moved toward her. 7. Philip could never tell lies without embarrassment, and he was scarlet when he finished his explanation for not

e) adverbial modifier of time

hearing, answering, leaving, passing, looking, reading, racing

1. She looked at the paper, after ... out this question. 2. Before ..., the little old lady grasped his arm. 3. He spent those nights after ... at his mother's house in Green Street. 4. He found an endless excitement in ... at their faces and ... them speak. 5. Tom considered before 6. She seemed excited on ... this. 7. Poirot had looked up at the staircase in ..., and shook his head in a dissatisfied manner.

f) adverbial modifier of manner, attending circumstances or cause

noticing, having, disguising, bringing, answering, working, coughing, laughing, breaking

1. Cindy glanced up, then away, without 2. Lize was able to make her own living by ... at a factory. 3. Eventually Selvyn couldn't laugh for ..., and again, he couldn't cough for 4. Can't we even laugh properly without ... trouble? 5. Was he trying to escape by ... himself? 6. Major Penny-mann went on without ... her interruption. 7. We might be fined for ... the Press along, George. 8. You might run all my life by ... your promise.

g) part of a compound verbal predicate

pacing, shaking, saying, looking, reproducing, eating, chatting, knitting

1. Teddy Lloyd continued ... Jean Brodie in his paintings. 2. He began ... the words aloud to himself. 3. They went on ... their dinner. 4. The old man stopped ... her fist and stick. 5. Sandy kept ... ahead, Mary tried to keep up with her. 6. Anson Harris had ceased ... out and was flying on instruments alone. 7. Two weeks old this child was, and the lady had just finished ... her a pram-cover in stripes of white and blue. 8. The twins started ... about their school life.

Exercise 6. Complete the following sentences using the gerund as:

a) subject

1. It was good ... 2. It was no use ... 3. ... was not a simple matter. 4. It was handy ... 5. There was nothing ... 6. ... was a great pleasure.

b) part of a compound verbal predicate

1. They went on ... 2. She kept ... 3. Little girl stopped ... 4. They ceased ... 5. She began ... toward the bedroom. 6. He started ... 7. She burst out ...

c) direct object

1. I suggest ... 2. They intended ... 3. Everybody enjoys ... 4. They couldn't avoid ... 5. She couldn't resist ... 6. You would not mind ... 7. His watch needed ... 8. My shirt wanted ... 9. Fancy ... 10. They were busy ... 11. He doesn't remember ... 12. They hated ... 13. I regret ...

d) prepositional object

1. I couldn't dream of ... 2. She was fond of ... 3. He was on the point of ... 4. I felt incapable of ... 5. He thought of ... 6. They were capable of ... 7. They were afraid of ... 8. There was a great deal of ... 9. Thank you for ... 10. He is not good at ... 11. They are clever at ... 12. They insisted on ... 13. He succeeded in ... 14. Forgive me for ... 15. They accused me of ... 16. I was aware of ... 17. He prevented her from ...

e) attribute

1. Is there any hope of ...? 2. I felt the need of ... 3. What are your grounds for ...? 4. His companions were just on the point of ... 5. As he approached he gave no sign of ... 6. This was her only chance of ... 7. He got into the habit of ... 8. I've no doubt she can change her way of ... 9. I don't like the idea of ...

f) adverbial modifier

1. She must keep an eye on him without ... 2. I ended by ... 3. After ... he went back to his room. 4. On ... I decided to leave. 5. She paused for half a minute before ... 6. He lost no time in ...

Exercise 7. Use the required form of the gerund and insert prepositions where necessary.

1. Good-bye, and thank you ever so much ... (to come) with me. 2. She was afraid ... (to go) on public transport. 3. She

began to have frightful pains all over her, and she held her breath to prevent herself ... (to cry) out and (to wake) her mother. 4. This was Daphne's only chance ... (to tell) them of her college life. 5. She had the local habit ... (to place) the word "eh" at the end of her remarks, questions and answers alike. 6. I was aware ... (to plunge) into a network of fresh difficulties. 7. His mother would not like the idea ... (to eat) fruit unwashed. 8. "It seems to me an awfully selfish way ... (to look) at things," said Philip. 9. "I don't see the use ... (to read) the same thing over and over again," said Philip. 10. Sandy could not remember ... (to ask) about it. 11. I had not asked for advice, I was quite capable ... (to advise) myself. 12. That's no reason ... (to give up). 13. It would be better to wait for him on the terrace where she was fond ... (to sit) toward evening (to enjoy) the view of which she was never tired. 14. Dad would not dream ... (to say) such a thing to anyone. 15. Miss Brodie was greatly taken aback and suffered greatly from a sense ... (to betray). 16. He was looking forward ... (to take) the tickets. 17. Are you thinking, Sandy, ... (to do) a day's washing? 18. And then a minute or two afterwards someone else entered the room and expressed his surprise ... (to find) Griffiths there. 19. She was on the point ... (to obtain) permission to go for walks alone. 20. Jane, your nose wants ... (to blow). 21. "That child needs ... (to take) care of," said Eliza. 22. He felt that life was worth ... (to take) care of. 23. The night seemed very long. He shivered. He was ashamed ... (to sleep) on the Embankment. 24. They were busy ... (to find) some food. 25. Did he suspect her ... (to see) him enter the room? 26. Thank you ... (to give) me this book. 27. His heart sank at the thought ... (to go) out into the bleak darkness. 28. These girls did not say anything to the others ... (to paint) by the art master. 29. "I'm not very good ... (to guess)," I said, with a laugh. 30. Ann was such a friendly, pretty child, few people could resist ... (to talk) to her. 31. The baby was round and very red, with dark curly hair. "Fancy her ... (to have) hair. I thought they were born bald," said Raymond. 32. I don't like ... (to wear) a black tie to movies. I enjoy ... (to see) my movies when I eat popcorn. 33. But I can't tell you how grateful I am to you ... (to listen) to me. I had to talk about it and it was so kind of you to listen.

Exercise 8. Change the construction of the sentences using the gerund.

Model: She laughed but she did not reply.

She laughed without replying.

1. She bowed her head but she did not speak. 2. I like when I do everything myself. 3. Philip was tired because he talked too much. 4. She insisted that she should be called Joyce Emily. 5. Within less than a minute, after she apologized to her guest, she was in the express lift to the main floor. 6. When he returned she went immediately into the dining-room. 7. I don't remember that I met him in London. 8. Little Jane liked when she was clean. 9. After he examined the patient he said it was simply a case of nerve strain. 10. I'm so tired because I sit at home. 11. I am still a little afraid to be late. 12. I like to get hold of nice things. 13. The younger man hesitated before he answered. 14. When he entered the room, he addressed Alec Warner without preliminaries. 15. I suggested that I should visit the Smiths. 16. She glanced round the comfortable consulting room before she answered. 17. He went on and did not pay any attention to her interruption. 18. He barely skimmed through his next letter before he handed it over to Raymond. 19. She stepped back and did not say a word. 20. After he left his friends at the Institute he bought copies of the early editions of the post. 21. Tom realized that he had seen Jane before but he did not recognize her. 22. When he realized this his first thought was to leave the vicinity of the house as quickly as possible.

Exercise 9. Translate into English using the gerund as:

a) subject

1. Мы знали, что с ним было бесполезно спорить.
2. Нехорошо так думать о своих друзьях. 3. Было бесполезно пытаться встретить его у Петровых. 4. Быть с друзьями на экскурсии — большое удовольствие. 5. Ловить рыбу в Черном море — не простое дело.

b) part of a compound verbal predicate

1. Он продолжал улыбаться. 2. Он остановился, чтобы что-то записать в блокнот, а затем продолжал идти.
3. Я люблю, когда мне читают волшебные сказки. 4. Он перестал улыбаться и внимательно на меня посмотрел.

5. Она взяла мою руку и продолжала рассказывать о своем путешествии на север. 6. То, что вы говорили, было так интересно, что я не могла не слушать. 7. Когда я вошла в зал, директор уже начал выступать. 8. Когда он кончил говорить, Том отодвинул стул и вышел. 9. Он продолжал что-то читать и смеяться. 10. Она не могла не думать о родителях. 11. Вы ждете, пока прекратится дождь? 12. Она продолжала вязать и смотреть телевизор. 13. Полчаса спустя он опять начал звонить Джону. 14. Когда вошли родители, они прекратили танцевать. 15. Идут занятия. Перестаньте шуметь! 16. Он рассмеялся, когда я рассказал ему о нашей охоте в тайге. 17. Он поздоровался с друзьями и начал рассказывать о занятиях в университете. 18. Он встал и медленно пошел к двери. 19. Она продолжала смотреть на часы.

c) object

1. Я очень устала сидеть дома. 2. Он способен к языкам. 3. Вы не будете возражать, если я запишу ваш адрес? 4. Он настаивал на том, чтобы меня проводили домой. 5. Я получаю большое удовольствие, когда читаю ваши стихи. 6. Я прекрасно могу управлять своей машиной. 7. Спасибо за то, что вы позвонили моей маме. 8. Я устала слушать его советы. 9. Когда Джон позвонил, мы были заняты приготовлением к охоте. 10. Спасибо, что вы пришли вовремя. 11. Она воздерживалась звонить ему. 12. За ним нужно присматривать. 13. Мне хочется что-нибудь почитать. 14. Когда дети вернулись из школы, я была занята приготовлением обеда. 15. Я помню, мне рассказывали об этом случае. 16. Туда стоит пойти сейчас же. 17. Она не могла не помочь ему. 18. Я настаивала на том, чтобы его навестили в больнице. 19. Я отчетливо помню, что слышала, как часы на камине пробили два часа. 20. Эту книгу стоит прочесть. 21. Простите за беспокойство. 22. Он был очень огорчен, что не нашел ее дома. 23. Замок был испорчен, но ей удалось его открыть. 24. Он постоянно боялся, что с ним будут об этом говорить. 25. Она не любила, когда ее несправедливо упрекали в чем-либо. 26. Ненавижу приезжать в пустой дом. 27. Я уже приняла две таблетки. Я хорошо помню, что я их приняла. 28. Я не могу найти

роман Э. Хемингуэя «Прощай, оружие!». Я помню, что я покупал эту книгу.

d) attribute

1. У нас есть все основания полагать, что у вас была привычка навещать их по вечерам. 2. Он был счастлив при мысли о том, что скоро опять увидит своих друзей. 3. После завтрака я объявила о своем намерении пойти на прогулку. 4. Есть ли какая-нибудь надежда застать их дома сейчас? 5. У меня не было времени подумать, как ответить на ваш вопрос. 6. Мне редко представляется случай повидать их всех вместе. 7. Какие у вас основания разговаривать с нами таким тоном?

e) adverbial modifier

1. Переписывая текст, она пропустила некоторые слова. 2. Я закончила, сказав, что скоро вернусь. 3. Он подумал, прежде чем ответить. 4. Я стала много писать, чтобы улучшить орфографию. 5. Получив письмо от брата, он поехал к нему первым поездом. 6. Читая эту книгу, он нашел много интересных выражений. 7. Он подождал полминуты, прежде чем ответить. 8. Позавтракав, он вернулся в свою комнату. 9. Выйдя из дома, он встретил своего школьного товарища. 10. Я устала от того, что много читала, и решила посидеть в кресле в саду. 11. После двух-часового чтения он положил чемодан на колени и начал что-то писать. 12. Услышав о приезде Елены, я решила ее навестить.

Exercise 10. State the syntactic functions of the gerundial complexes. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. She turned round on his entering the room. 2. She can't bear thinking of it or speaking of it. And your saying that reminded her. 3. But of course someone might have gone to the table without your noticing? 4. It was no good your doing things by halves. 5. I was too absorbed in my crying. 6. He complained, "I don't like the idea of you all going off from early morning till late at night. I don't like being alone, quite frankly." 7. She changed the style of her dancing, her feet moved more quickly, and did not keep so strictly to the ground. 8. I can't bear the thought of your deserting your post when your presence is so necessary.

Exercise 11. Complete the sentences using the gerundial complexes from the following list:

your thinking, her talking, my bringing, our waiting, his being taken, my not sitting, our keeping, your being left alone, your hearing

1. "You do not mind ... Graham," said Daniel. "I find it best to keep him under my eye." 2. It is true she had prevented ... to a mental home for treatment. 3. I like the idea ... of other projects. 4. Some people it seems don't like ... to the rules. 5. But that doesn't excuse ... to Mrs Leidner as though Mrs Leidner were her great aunt. 6. I could see that Robinson was making an effort to form some communal for the period of ... on the island. 7. "You didn't mind ... at one of your tables this afternoon?" he asked once, when he was walking to the station with her. 8. There must be something wrong with ..., Godfrey. 9. I should have thought that ... alone has given you a lot of opportunities.

Exercise 12. Complete the following sentences using gerundial complexes.

1. I didn't mind 2. They objected 3. She prevented 4. I don't remember 5. He entered the room without 6. They insisted 7. I don't like the idea 8. Do you think there is any use ...? 9. I can't bear the thought 10. There was no point 11. It was good 12. He could no more resist

Exercise 13. Translate into English using gerundial complexes.

1. Ему не нравилась моя идея одной ехать на Кавказ. 2. Представь себе, ей хотелось знать, что его беспокоит. 3. Он настаивает, чтобы я держала окна открытыми независимо от погоды. 4. Вы не возражаете, если я поработаю сегодня в вашем кабинете? 5. Я удивлена, что вы оставили маленького мальчика одного дома. 6. Вы помните, я вам говорила, что мой муж инженер. 7. Я не могу себе представить, чтобы вы так долго сидели в читальном зале. 8. Казалось, что мне не было больше нужды оставаться в Москве. 9. Интересно, как она вошла в дом так, что мы не видели ее.

Exercise 14. Translate into English.

1. Я была тронута, что он навестил меня. 2. Простите меня за беспокойство. 3. У меня не было никакой возможности связаться с Джейн. 4. Было очень хорошо увидеть вас опять у нас. 5. Вы не возражаете, если я сегодня вечером поработаю за вашим столом? 6. Он устал стоять. 7. Они не хотели, чтобы я его сопровождала. 8. Том, нужно упаковать твои игрушки. 9. Они сидели в течение некоторого времени не разговаривая. 10. Они настаивали, чтобы я вернулся ровно в два часа. 11. Я не могла не улыбнуться, когда маленький Джон вошел в ботинках отца. 12. Она продолжала смотреть по сторонам и прислушиваться к шуму наверху. 13. Я не сомневаюсь в том, что она может изменить свой образ жизни, если захочет. 14. Когда я вошел, он уже собирался уходить. 15. Кроме того, что он преподавал физику в школе, он прекрасно рисовал. 16. Мне не нравится идея дать маленькому Тому ключ от комнаты. 17. Джек продолжал стоять с чашкой кофе и разговаривать с гостями. 18. Ей не хотелось идти за покупками после утомительной поездки на дачу. 19. Извините, что я так поздно пришла. 20. Я не возражаю против того, чтобы поехать с вами путешествовать на Дальний Восток. 21. Я надеюсь, вы не возражаете против того, чтобы я вас навещал каждую субботу. 22. Он выслушал приказ, ни о чем не спрашивая. 23. У него не было намерения ехать в экспедицию. 24. Она продолжала писать сочинение, когда кто-то позвонил по телефону. 25. Простите, что я так говорю, но сидеть здесь без дела бесполезно. 26. Вы думаете, что есть смысл, чтобы я остался здесь работать в качестве инженера? 27. Ему не составило труда найти в библиотеке то, что он хотел. 28. Она покачала головой, не отвечая на его вопрос. 29. Она была серьезно больна и не могла сосредоточиться на чтении книги. 30. Извините, что я вошел без стука. 31. Они рассчитывали, что им помогут упаковать вещи. 32. Не было смысла об этом думать. 33. Мне не хотелось бы, чтобы вы остались здесь одни. 34. Он опять рассмеялся, не дождавшись от нее ответа. 35. Не было смысла переходить мост. 36. Дженни сохранила привычку устраивать чай в девять часов, и я пошел

с ней на кухню. 37. Я почувствовал необходимость пройти по парку. 38. Я помню, что он однажды был в Москве.

Exercise 15. Use the appropriate form of the infinitive or the gerund of the verb in brackets.

1. Over coffee, he began (to calm) down a little: he made himself useful by (to hand) round the coffee cups. 2. I wouldn't like you to think that I am in the habit of (to make) a nuisance of myself. 3. She went on (to read) about how (to stick) plastic flowers on her blouse. 4. The master seized the arms of his chair and grasped them as though (to prevent) himself from (to fall) upon Philip. 5. I remember (to see) her (to come) on board only a few minutes before the boat sailed. 6. John had introduced himself to Philip before (to come) in to see Kitty. 7. He seemed (to have) some difficulty in (to start). 8. She tried (to stop) (to go out) (to see) people. 9. And with an immense effort of the will, he managed (to stand) there, without (to go) down (to open) the door. 10. Can you (to ask) me after (to hear) me (to play)? 11. Thank you for (to let) me (to talk) to you. 12. Ralph began (to disappear) for days and weeks without (to warn). 13. Without (to speak) they went along, and there was no one (to see) either in front or behind them. 14. After that they decided (to go) where there was no chance at all of their (to see). 15. He took a silk scarf from his neck and gave it over to me (to use) for a handkerchief, since my own was wet with my (to cry). 16. Once more, Simon started (to piece) the toy together, with the old tune inside it, while Jennie and I went (to make) some tea. 17. When she woke, she rubbed her eyes (to gather) her senses together and gradually she remembered (to go) to the theatre on the previous evening. 18. I taught in a private school in Kensington, for almost three months, very small children. I didn't know what (to do) with them but I was kept fairly busy (to escort) little boys to the hall and (to tell) the little girls (to use) their handkerchiefs.

Exercise 16. Analyse the *ing*-forms stating whether they are gerunds or verbal nouns.

1. I hate the idea of your wasting your time. 2. I was afraid of being called upon to give evidence against her. 3. The twins devotedly gave up their day to the cutting of

sandwiches. 4. She was put out by being kept waiting. 5. I sat in the sun, extremely tired in my bones after the crossing of the mountain on the previous day. 6. She was angry at being put beside Tom. 7. He was engaged in overwhelming Helen with reproaches for not having told him of Jack's change of sleeping quarters. 8. It was hot walking through the town but the sun was starting to go down and it was very pleasant. 9. Godfrey felt guilty at having gossiped to Olive about Lettie's changes in her will. 10. It was good walking on the road. But it was lovely walking in the woods. 11. Poirot lost no time in visiting M. Hautet. 12. He crossed back into the doorway, and, slowly, to keep down the beating of his heart, mounted the single flight of stairs and rang the bell. 13. There was a tramping of feet. 14. No one ever thought of protecting Isabel. 15. He walked to the edge of the terrace, and looked down into the darkness; he could just see the powdering of the daisies on the unmown lawn. 16. Raising good cotton, riding well, dancing lightly were the things that mattered. 17. It was a habit with him to tell her the doings of his day. 18. He liked dancing quickly. 19. Lewis had offices in Zurich and London, and his comings and goings were casual. 20. "I'm not very clever at guessing people's ages," she said coldly.

PARTICIPLE I

Exercise 1. State the form of participles I.

1. Alex was by a window, looking out at the city's lights, when Margot returned. 2. His cough had slackened but his nose was still running. Otherwise he did not grumble, he lay there being read to, at times apathetic. 3. Having eaten cold beef, pickled walnut, gooseberry tart, they walked into the park. 4. He was not very good at gardening, having been brought up with a back yard and a few sinking geraniums. 5. She stepped forward, smiling. 6. Having said that Jolyon was ashamed.

Exercise 2. Give all possible forms of participle I of the following verbs:

to come, to cover, to read, to write, to look, to wait, to ring, to think, to sleep, to go, to laugh, to give.

Exercise 3. Note the time distinctions of participles I.

1. Taking his seat, he looked at his watch. 2. Linger-
ing in the cold, he debated whether he should ride on to the house.
3. Having heard the gist of the report, Mr Smith did not
dispute it. 4. Arriving at the station, she saw him at once,
leaning against the railing. 5. Crossing that little empty
room to the door, she thought, "It opens inwards, I must pull
it to behind me!" 6. Adrian, glancing round, suddenly saw
Kate. 7. Jane, having slammed the kitchen door, stood wait-
ing for Tom to open it. 8. So thinking, he paused before his
house door. 9. Hearing that the new Member would be at his
headquarters all the morning, the sisters started about elev-
en o'clock. 10. About to sink into an armchair, he noticed
standing before the fire a tallish thin man with twisting
dark eyebrows.

**Exercise 4. State the functions of participles I. Translate the sentences
into Russian.**

1. Hoping Christine would come soon, he returned his
attention to Flora and the morning mail. 2. He handed the
message to her, who read it, leaning towards a light beside
her. 3. He began to stammer, gazing at her troubled eyes.
4. Mr Parker stood looking up and down. 5. Relocking the
door, he glanced at the envelope. 6. Louise straightened her
handbag, searching for her pencil. 7. They left the shining
carriage, with the shining horses. 8. Daisy took her face in
her hands as if feeling its lovely shape. 9. Two little boys
carrying toy aeroplanes stopped dead, examining her dark
eyelashes resting on her cream-coloured cheeks. 10. Put-
ting down the receiver, Fleur took up the time-table.

Exercise 5. Replace the construction with participle I by:

a) an attributive clause

1. He recalled a fascinating figure, reminding him of
Titian's "Heavenly Love". 2. The door opened, but into a little
space leading to another door. 3. The word coming from the
very bottom of his soul, broke up the dinner. 4. There came
the young man hurrying away. 5. A subdued light radiated
from a single green-paper-shaded bulb hanging in the cen-
tre. 6. Look at the people ploughing in that field. I do love

horses moving slowly against a skyline of trees. 7. Clare was silent, and Sir Lawrence, watching her, thought: "Attractive, but a lot of naughty temper." 8. There was a fire burning, and one candle burning in the room. 9. Clare shook her head, and a dark curl fell over her forehead, reminding Dinny of her as a child. 10. Their room had two curtained windows looking over the street, a couch with cushions, an almost empty bookcase and some photographs of the family standing on it.

b) an adverbial clause of time

1. Cronshaw, hearing her, turned a sleepish eye upon her. 2. Resuming the tune on his pipe, Adrian stole several glances at his silent neighbour. 3. Reaching the hotel at Knightsbridge he went to their sitting-room, and rang for tea. 4. Arriving at the Gallery off Cork Street, however, he paid his shilling, picked up a catalogue, and entered. 5. Nodding to her husband, she went over to her father. 6. He opened the door, and closing it softly, detained Soames on the inner mat. 7. So saying, he left her and turned towards Soho. 8. Opening the window, he went out to the terrace. 9. Going up to the dressing-table he passed his hand over the lilac-coloured pin-cushion.

c) an adverbial clause of reason

1. Mel stopped, realizing he was talking to himself. 2. I came here this afternoon thinking I might find Fleur. 3. From there on he travelled by the clock, timing himself to reach Melton Mews at two o'clock. 4. Having been away from it for two days I'd forgotten how depressing it could be. 5. Philip, not knowing what on earth this new attitude implied, went back to his work.

Exercise 6. Join each of the following pairs of sentences using constructions with participles I.

Model: He walked into the centre of the great empty drawing-room, he stood still.

Walking into the centre of the great empty drawing-room, he stood still.

1. He dropped on his knees, he tried to get nearer to that soft troubled face. 2. He walked quickly, he replaced the board, the rug, the furniture. 3. Mr Carey took the paper with him,

he retired to his study. 4. Milly hesitated, she searched for the right words for what was in her mind. 5. She flushed darkly and she took up the picture quickly and turned its back to John. 6. Tom pursed his lips, he considered. 7. She lifted the telephone, she answered, "Yes?" 8. I paused, I did not quite know how to express myself. 9. He turned away, he strode through the hospital. 10. But Soames looked very real, he sat square yet almost elegant with the clipped moustache on his smile. 11. When Stephen thought about these things, he made himself ill. 12. The light from the shaded piano-candle fell on her neck, it left her face rather in shadow. 13. He carried a valise in either hand, he stepped out on the landing. 14. He looked up, he caught the amused look in Edward's eyes, and he flushed darkly.

Exercise 7. Replace the clauses by the appropriate form of participles I where possible.

a) attributive clauses

1. I've got my lunch which was waiting for me here.
 2. He pointed to the vessel which was lying at the wharves.
 3. I went to the hall for a look, and swallowed something that had been wanting to be swallowed for ten minutes.
 4. The man who bent over her is her director. 5. "That's good, and where is Jennie?" The latter, who had been ironing, had abandoned the board and had concealed herself in the bedroom. 6. Philip, who was smoking a cheap cigar, observed him closely. 7. Jack almost dropped the leather bag on which he had been writing. 8. Peter seated himself in a leather chair which faced the desk. 9. Stephen, who had been listening to the unspoken speech behind the words, said nothing.

b) adverbial clauses of time

1. When he said so, he grasped the map firmly with both hands. 2. When he hailed a taxi, he got in and told the driver to drive to Oxford Street. 3. Howden nodded when he took another chocolate cookie. 4. Edward walked to the edge of the verandah and when he leaned over he looked intently at the blue magic of the night. 5. When he bowed to the Chairman and pushed back his chair, he walked doggedly to the door, opened it and passed through.

c) adverbial clauses of reason

1. She moved away as she felt slightly embarrassed. 2. He got a seat rather far back in the upper boxes, but as his sight was very good, he saw quite well. 3. As she did not know whether he had seen his brother or not, she did not know how to answer. 4. She stared back, as she did not know what to do. 5. Then I walked slowly down the drive away from the house as I intended to wait by the gate.

Exercise 8. Use the appropriate form of participle I of the verb in brackets.

1. Poirot and I behaved in the customary fashion of people (to show) over houses. 2. I felt a bitter envy towards the two small boys (to walk) along the path. 3. (to greet) her, he turned the key in the only door with a certain skill. 4. (to have) tea she went early to Victoria Station. 5. There was a noise of curtain-rings (to run) back along the rods, of water (to splash) in the basins. 6. She had a palè face and dark hair (to turn) grey. 7. (to pick up) his coat, he walked on into the field. 8. The dog Balthasar, (to walk) round the three small flower-beds, had also taken a seat in front of old Jolyon. 9. He and Soames stood in the drawing-room (to wait). 10. Not for one moment did he show surprise at the wedding gift (to present) to him personally. 11. (to dry) his hands, Tom came across from the washstand. 12. The major was at the telephone (to sit) on a box. 13. She had a hand on his shoulders and was including herself in the pictures (to take). 14. He crossed the room to the long buffet (to stand) beside the girl he picked up a sandwich. Then, (to turn) and (to speak) nervously and with an effort he said, "I say, do you mind if I speak to you?" 15. (to think) this, with some comfort, she fell asleep. 16. (to see) Fleur and his grandson off to the sea that morning, he felt flat. 17. Miss Lindey, (to see) Rose, smiled. 18. Miss Swiss poured out another cup of tea for herself, and (to taste) it, plunged into further confidences. 19. (to walk) longside, Dan inclined his head towards the building they had left. 20. (to jump) down from the stairs, he went over to the driver. 21. (to lift) the telephone, Peter asked for the director.

Exercise 9. Translate into English using participle I in the function of

a) an attribute

1. Он смотрел на мальчика, сидевшего на стуле в саду. 2. Мальчик, который сидел на стуле в саду, ушел домой. 3. «Что случилось?» — спросил отец, услышавший шум из соседней комнаты. 4. Таня, гладившая белье на кухне, ушла в гостиную. 5. Они вышли на дорогу, которая вела в лес. 6. Ее голос был как журчащий ручеек. 7. Они жили в доме, который когда-то принадлежал ее бабушке. 8. Он присоединился к Пете, который стоял у гостиницы. 9. Он рассказывал о комнате, в которой жил в течение ряда лет. 10. Он смотрел на людей, которые проходили мимо его дома. 11. Джейн смотрела на увядшие растения, которые росли у стены. 12. Он увлеченно рассказывал о городах, в которых ему удалось побывать.

b) an adverbial modifier of time

1. Он незаметно задремал, сидя в кресле под деревом. 2. Войдя в комнату, она сразу же увидела там Тома. 3. Закрыв дверь, он подошел к письменному столу. 4. Я снова встретил его на корабле по возвращении домой. 5. Закрыв тихо дверь, он вышел в сад. 6. Взглянув на закрытую дверь, молодой человек подошел поближе. 7. Когда он брился, он вдруг вспомнил, что она назвала свою девичью фамилию. 8. Они вошли в комнату, громко разговаривая. 9. Сняв старое платье, она надела новое. 10. Посмотрев вниз, он увидел своего сына с друзьями.

c) an adverbial modifier of attending circumstances

1. Подойдя к зеркалу, он посмотрел на свое лицо. 2. Он вышел, стараясь не беспокоить своего племянника. 3. Сжав губы, она кивнула в знак согласия. 4. Он стоял неподвижно, облокотившись на стол. 5. Он спокойно лежал, думая о предстоящей командировке на Кавказ. 6. Он вошел в комнату, неся кофе для Елены. 7. Он молчал, ожидая, когда мальчики уйдут из комнаты. 8. Она сидела у окна и смотрела на улицу. 9. Он стоял незамеченным, наблюдая за мальчиками во дворе.

Exercise 10. Translate into English using participles I where possible.

1. Он осторожно сел на диван, который был напротив буфета. 2. Закрыв за ней дверь, он вернулся в свою комнату. 3. Она еще раз позвонила, застав дыхание. 4. По-

целовав детей, он ушел на работу. 5. Его прямые черные волосы, блестящие от масла, были зачесаны назад. 6. Выйдя из машины, он вошел в коричневое каменное здание. 7. Я хочу, чтобы вы опять послушали музыку, которую мы вместе слушали на концерте. 8. Ей очень понравился костюм для охоты. 9. Молодой человек, посмотрев в ту и другую сторону, проводил Джейн в комнату. 10. Она пристально посмотрела на жену Джека, которая стояла в центре комнаты. 11. Посмотрев на Тома, который сломал свою игрушку, отец покачал головой. 12. Они дошли до двери и стояли там разговаривая. 13. Он указал пальцем на женщину, которая стояла у метро. 14. Приблизившись к центру города, он остановился у автомата и позвонил Милли. 15. Она подняла книгу, которую уронила на пол. 16. Он взял стакан, из которого пил его брат.

Exercise 11. Point out the complex object with the participle. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. I heard him moving about, and presently he was back with some hot soup. 2. When Mary opened her eyes she saw Nina standing by her side. 3. Simon shortly found her having coffee in the sitting-room. 4. She felt her cheeks blushing a little. 5. I noticed Tom Wells standing in the shadow of the fountain. 6. She liked to watch him doing things, digging, planting, trimming.

Exercise 12. Translate into English using complex objects with participles I.

1. Я видела, как вы проехали мимо нашего дома в своей машине. 2. Я заметил, как она входила в кондитерскую. 3. Она открыла окно и наблюдала, как ее дети играли во дворе. 4. Он чувствовал, как мать гладила его руку. 5. Они видели, как ее мать ходила взад и вперед по комнате. 6. Он чувствовал, как у него дрожали руки. 7. Учительница наблюдала, как дети входили в школу. 8. Он нашел ее на платформе в ожидании поезда. 9. Она слышала, как ее муж тяжело спускался по лестнице. 10. Когда Джек увидел, как Том пересекал улицу, он помахал ему рукой.

Exercise 13. Use the infinitive or participle I of the verb in brackets.

1. He watched McNeil (to cross) the room and (to go) out of the door. 2. She saw his teeth (to gleam) in what must be a smile. 3. "Some stairs here," said Calvin. Hunter saw him (to vanish) down a twist of stone stairs. 4. He lifted his head quickly and saw Annette (to stand) just outside the drawing-room windows. 5. This phrase made Jane (to sigh) deeply as she poured out the coffee. 6. The noise in the entrance hall continued, and more vehicles could be heard (to arrive) at the door. 7. "Hold the print with these tongs," said Calvin, "and move it in the solution as I told you. Soon you'll see the picture (to appear). It's like magic. I never get tired of seeing the picture (to come)." 8. As Rosa watched Jan (to disappear) round a corner fifty yards away down the workroom, she jumped violently to see his face. 9. Calvin departed laughing, and could be heard (to laugh) and (to sneeze) all the way down the stairs. 10. Looking toward the door, he saw Lucy (to come in). 11. He walked through the drawing-room into the garden. In the last light he saw the flowers (to close up).

Exercise 14. Use participles I from the following list. Note its function. Translate the sentences into Russian.

going, rising, coming, standing, turning

1. Rosa's voice could be heard ... above the noise. 2. At the moment footsteps were heard ... across the hall and the drawing-room door was opened cautiously. 3. Upstairs Annette could be heard ... on her bath. 4. The outer door was open, and through the glass of the inner door two footmen could be seen ... in the hall. 5. Each day his short, stocky figure could be seen ... along the corridors.

Exercise 15. Translate into English using the complex subject with the participle I.

1. Видели, как он шел по Красной площади. 2. Видели, как такси ждало кого-то у подъезда. 3. Видели, как они поднимались по лестнице. 4. Видели, как мальчики из нашей школы играли в крикет. 5. Эти пожилые люди живут внизу, и иногда слышно, как они о чем-то разговаривают. 6. Слышали, как Джейн открывала дверь. 7. Видели, как Джеймс стоял около письменного стола и просматривал какой-то журнал. 8. Слышали, как она пела в соседней комнате.

Exercise 1. State the function of participles II. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. The answer to this was unexpected. 2. You didn't look so interested. 3. There was a stillness in the small intimate dining-room, broken only by the subdued ticking of a Dutch clock upon the wall. 4. He replaced used ash-trays on the table with fresh, and refilled Dodo's coffee cup, then the others. 5. He entered, puzzled but interested. 6. She always became impatient when asked to define a word of whose definition she was not sure. 7. Puzzled by the dim light, Sanders turned his attention to the inshore areas. 8. "Tell you what," said Gideon, as if struck with a new idea. 9. You could have passed me by unnoticed. 10. Presently he came to a standstill, with his hands deep plunged into his pockets. 11. She had no photographs of herself taken since her marriage.

Exercise 2. Replace the attributive clauses by phrases with the participle II.

1. Alan who was greatly surprised answered, "That's right." 2. She who was astonished, stared at Peter, then looked the other way. 3. He looked back at the large car that was parked at the road side, already ten yards away. 4. One of their drivers who was brought by Gordini came over to me. 5. Arthur had brought two wildly excited friends who were called Tom and Nigger, for Barney and me. 6. One day she found a letter which was slipped under her door. 7. An hour and a half ago they had had a late dinner here, which was delivered from a service restaurant on the apartment block's main floor. 8. John had enormous black eyes which were framed in velvety lashes and eyebrows. 9. Jane who was greatly surprised to see her son here looked up. 10. Eliza who was excited by his words moved along the street.

Exercise 3. Replace the phrases with the participle II by attributive or adverbial clauses.

1. "Oh, Roger," said Nick, touched and impressed, "how extremely noble of you to come here." 2. He had sprung to action as if frightened. 3. There was another thought too,

unexpressed, in Stephen's mind. 4. Karel had shown remarkable self-control when informed that he had missed Frances by a day. 5. Have you by any chance a seat left on a flight to Vancouver? 6. The questioner was a newspaperman named Derek Eden, whom she knew slightly. 7. The reporter rose as if stung. 8. When questioned closely, she said it was true that she hadn't seen her husband up and about lately. 9. Her hands, gloved in French grey, were crossed one over the other. 10. Irene smiled tolerantly when questioned. 11. And each answer made was written down quickly upon the sheets of paper. 12. Moreover, seated among this company on wide verandah after dinner he could look round without catching the cool eye of some critic.

Exercise 4. Translate into English.

1. Она посмотрела на его поношенный костюм. 2. Молодая женщина казалась испуганной. 3. Когда ее попросили, она дала свой адрес. 4. Большая украшенная новогодняя елка занимала весь угол комнаты около рояля. 5. Он заметил, что она покраснела и выглядела смущенной. 6. В его голосе все еще была неудовлетворенность. 7. Это была худая женщина с белым лицом и крашеными волосами. 8. Дайте им мой телефон, если у вас его попросят. 9. У его дяди был старинный друг по имени Том, который жил в Лондоне. 10. Она посмотрела на него испуганными глазами и вышла из комнаты, ничего не сказав. 11. Когда к ней обратились, она показала нам самый короткий путь к вокзалу. 12. В его голосе звучало разочарование. 13. Моя мама была одной из четырех женщин, сидевших за столом. 14. Они были хорошо знакомы. 15. На следующий день мы отправились по адресу, который дал нам доктор. 16. Когда я подошел к письменному столу, я обнаружил на нем запечатанный конверт. 17. Он смог бы сделать гораздо больше для вас, если бы он был лучше информирован.

Exercise 5. Point out the complex object with the participle II. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. I am not accustomed to having my word doubted. 2. I want my head examined for making this dangerous journey. 3. "I want to get the grass cut," he said. 4. "Do people

have their own photographs taken?" said Paul. 5. Your sister would like a bottle opened. 6. I want Jane and her husband moved into one of the new houses on the hill. 7. Eliza, as she did on most days, had coffee and a sandwich sent in. 8. At last she heard her name called. 9. He also kept his hair dyed black. 10. Shall we have Nevill brought down to say good night? 11. She ordered the calf driven from the yard. 12. If you insult me I shall have you turned out of here.

Exercise 6. Translate into English.

1. Она слышала, как называли ее фамилию. 2. Ему нужно пойти в ателье заказать хороший костюм. 3. Я распрямлюсь, чтобы вам принесли обед наверх. 4. Я не хочу, чтобы для него что-либо делали. 5. В среду утром ей сделали массаж лица и прическу. 6. Очень немногие люди не фотографируются. 7. Мы не могли позволить, чтобы дети оставались на улице в такое время. 8. Можно мне открыть ставни? 9. Он приказал доставить ее в аэропорт ровно в девять часов. 10. Она не хочет записывать свой голос на пленку. 11. Ей удалили два зуба. 12. Они быстро ушли мерить давление. 13. Он привык, что за него все делали другие. 14. Я хочу, чтобы мои указания точно выполнялись. 15. Она все время держала его в курсе всех дел. 16. Ему следует подстричься. 17. Было ясно, что он очень хотел, чтобы нарисовали его портрет. 18. Не делайте этого. Я ненавижу, когда меня причесывают. 19. Можно для меня вызвать такси? 20. Если хотите, я позабочусь, чтобы доклад был приготовлен.

Exercise 7. Point out the absolute participial phrase. Comment on its function, translate the sentences into Russian.

1. He reached out across the table, his hand covering Marsha's. 2. Iris stared out over the landscape, her chin cupped in her hand. 3. She stopped, a red spot on each cheekbone. 4. Old Jolyon stood at the bottom of the bed, his hands folded in front of him. 5. And, cigar in mouth, old Jolyon said: "Play me some Chopin." 6. Chance was silent, his eyes intent on Silvertip. 7. They set out with a lantern, Boddick telling his tale. 8. Treleven stood by the radio panel, his fingers fixed on the clock. 9. He stood, his hands behind him. 10. One

night, Winifred having gone to the theatre, he sat down with a cigar, to think. 11. He looked at her intently, his curiosity reviving. 12. They were on the porch and Rhett was bowing right and left, his hat in his hand, his voice cool and soft. 13. Less than half an hour ago, after Dodo's leave-taking, he had paced the suite living-room, his thoughts confused and troubled. 14. Archie sat on a stool by the hearth, his back against the fireplace.

Exercise 8. Translate into English.

1. Он вошел в комнату с чемоданом в руке. 2. Он вышел из кабинета директора в хорошем настроении. 3. Отец с трубкой во рту встал из-за письменного стола и подошел к книжному шкафу. 4. Когда мама предложила обедать в саду, все быстро вышли из дома. 5. Когда стол был накрыт, мама позвала гостей. 6. Он вошел без стука, так как дверь была открыта. 7. Он спокойно лежал на диване с книгой в руках. 8. Он шел быстро, с опущенной головой, не глядя по сторонам. 9. Маленькая Аня перестала играть на рояле и встала у окна, повернувшись спиной ко всем. 10. Джейн шла на небольшом расстоянии от всех с кожаной сумкой в руке. 11. Она продолжала слушать своих друзей с широко открытыми от удивления глазами. 12. После обеда наступило долгое молчание: Анна думала о детях, а дети — о ней. 13. Если погода улучшится, мы сможем поехать за город завтра. 14. Она спокойно ждала друзей около театра, спрятав подбородок в меховой воротник.

Exercise 9. Point out wholly and partially substantivized adjectives and participles II. Translate the sentences into Russian.

1. John is a relative of Mrs Smith's. 2. The accuser stands to lose more than the accused. 3. She looked straight into his eyes. Her own were large, of a very dark brown, and starry. 4. Her hair was pale blond. 5. He walked with her along a pleasant corridor. Yellows and greens predominated. 6. That green is just my colour and it would make my eyes look green. 7. "I suppose you can speak Italian, can't you?" — "No, I can speak English and French. My mother tongue is Russian." 8. I thought he might be a Portuguese from the east coast. 9. The French see these things differently from

us. 10. "The Scotch are such a moral people," Catherine said. 11. It was she who saw to it that there were schools for their children, hospitals for their sick, food for those no longer able to work, and care and respect for the aged. 12. They're taking some wounded out to the hospital ship right over there. 13. How foolish the old were, thinking they could tell what the young felt! 14. Philip heard that the poor helped one another. 15. Of the injured, Dodo was brought up last. 16. Just for an instant, she could feel ordinary among the ordinary. 17. The animals had been frightened, cold, wild as forest creatures, the strong attacking the weak, the weak waiting for the weaker to die so they could eat them. 18. His instinct had always been to forgive the beautiful. 19. The past, it seemed, did not die, as he had thought, but lived on beside the present, and sometimes, perhaps, became the future.

SYNTAX

PRELIMINARIES

Exercise 1. Distinguish between notional and functional words in each sentence of the following passages. State their grammatical types.

1. I looked at my watch. It was nearly an hour past midnight. In the corridor the lights were out, except one jet at the end. I threw a cloak upon my shoulders, put on a Spanish hat, and left my apartment, listening to the echoes of my measured steps retreating through the deserted passages. A strange sight arrested me on the landing of the grand staircase. Through an open door I saw the moonlight shining through the windows of a saloon in which some entertainment had recently taken place. I looked at my watch again: it was but one o'clock; and yet the guests had departed. I entered the room, my boots ringing loudly on the waxed boards. (*G.B. Shaw*)

2. There was deep peace in Kashima till Mrs Vansuythen arrived. She was a charming woman, everyone said so everywhere; and she charmed everyone. In spite of this, or, perhaps, because of this, since Fate is so perverse, she cared only for one man, and he was Major Vansuythen. Had she been plain or stupid, this matter would have been intelligible to Kashima. But she was a fair woman, with very still gray eyes, the colour of a lake just before the light of the sun touches it. No man who had seen those eyes could, later on, explain what fashion of woman she was to look upon. The eyes dazzled him. (*R. Kipling*)

3. I saw Strickland not infrequently, and now and then played chess with him. He was of uncertain temper. Some-

times he would sit silent and abstracted, taking no notice of anyone; and at others, when he was in a good humour, he would talk in his own halting way. He never said a clever thing, but he had a vein of brutal sarcasm which was not ineffective, and he always said exactly what he thought. He was indifferent to the susceptibilities of others, and when he wounded them was amused. (*W. S. Maugham*)

Exercise 2. Consider the types of syntactic connection between the notional words in the following sentences (coordination: *syndetic*, *asyndetic*; subordination: *agreement*, *government*, *adjoinment*).

1. They left the villa after breakfast. 2. Can she have been this woman's daughter? 3. The man rapidly recovered himself. 4. A blush rose to her cheeks and ashamed her. 5. Did I love those friends of mine? 6. I am retired, but not banned from society altogether. 7. For a moment or two James had a strong feeling of disgust. 8. She often left her personal letters, papers and jewels scattered carelessly around. 9. The secretary walked in with a folder under his arm. 10. Margaret was his type, small, dark and full of life. 11. The largest quantities of salt occur in sea water as well as in solid beds called rock salt. 12. Calm now, smooth from his outburst, he picked up the letter. 13. Throughout recorded history wood has proved to be one of the man's most valuable natural resources. 14. You may take it or leave it.

Exercise 3. Point out the part-of-speech characteristics and the syntactic role of the italicized words. Translate into Russian.

1. Unfortunately, I must *go*. That's no *go*. You'll find her on the *go*, as usual. Why *go* into detail? 2. *Hunger* is a nasty sensation. These young people *hunger* for knowledge. 3. Can't he *drive* a car? What are you *driving* at? *Driving* in the city at this hour is not a simple thing. Our crazy *drive* among the rocks came to an end. The *drive* was lined with tall plane-trees. 4. Your luck is waiting *round* the corner. Will the racing boats *round* the cape? He is just like a *round* peg in a square hole. A *round* of cheers followed another. Again they seemed to be arguing *round* and *round*. 5. Look *up* at that window just under the roof. Is this an *up* train? Every one of us has got his *ups* and *downs*. The noises of the

city were dying *down*. Ann and Emily were walking hand in hand *down* the hill. The order was to *down* the enemy plane. 6. The boy is *too* excitable. Ted will be helping you, *too*. 7. You may take *either* side in the argument provided you are acting according to your conviction. *Either* of the cameras will do. I can't understand it, *either*. 8. If you have read the *above* carefully, you will see perfectly what I mean. *Above* all don't forget to give my love to Pete. I'm afraid the *above* rule is hardly applicable in our case. 9. Can't you sit *still* for a minute? What he says is reasonable enough, *still* there are some points to be clarified. This is a *still* from the film I have told you about.

Exercise 4. Define the general grammatical meaning of the following sentence constructions. Translate into Russian.

Model: 1. The car was parked in front of the house.: thing — its state — its place. 2. The man halted.: actor — action. 3. Mrs Stone grew dahlias in her garden.: actor — action — thing acted upon — place of action. 4. The tracery was made with a fine chisel.: object of action — (reverse) action — instrument.

1. I was not surprised at this. 2. Who has said this admirable thing? 3. Jim was absolutely indifferent to money. 4. A sudden pang seized him. 5. I didn't see him again for nearly a week. 6. We knew very little about the newcomer. 7. The little Princess walked up and down the terrace with her companions. 8. At the end of the garden stood a little pavilion. 9. The silence became intolerable. 10. The speaker was received enthusiastically. 11. I felt her displeasure keenly. 12. Where is my umbrella? 13. The letter was written in green. 14. Show me your latest water-colour, will you? 15. Mary was eyeing the man suspiciously. 16. The show was magnificent. 17. It was very cold on that day. 18. Don't be late for dinner.

Exercise 5. Point out the part-of-speech qualification and the syntactic role of the artificial word *abcd* and its derivatives in the following sentences.

1. You are talking like an *abcd*. 2. The book was so *abcing* that I read it twice without an interval. 3. Why is *Abcd* playing the piano now? She should be reading for the

exam. 4. To our satisfaction everything was done quite *ab-*
cidly and we could go on with our task. 5. My friend *ab-*
*cid*s to his native town every summer. 6. She stood *ab-*
cid, her eyes half closed. 7. From where we stood, we could *ab-*
cid every-
thing going on in the court. 8. About these *ab-*
*cid*s, you'll
excuse me, but I am at a loss what to do with them. 9. She
was an *ab-*
cid girl with plump cheeks and big round eyes.
10. Jim was happy to find her so *ab-*
cid that day. 11. You are
stupid as a child, and that is *ab-*
*cid*ing a great deal. 12. Oh,
what's that! *Ab-*
cid? 13. Much *ab-*
cid has been wasted without
any tangible results obtained.

Exercise 6. Consider the groupings of words, or phrase-structure, of the following sentences. State the functions of the groups (phrases) in terms of primary (subject, predicate) and secondary (object, adverbial modifier, attribute) parts of the sentence.

1. All of us shall remember her first visit. 2. The next morning Peter Newman moved my things to the Metropolitan Hotel. 3. Why aren't the boys packing up? 4. Another agonizing sob shook the body of the poor woman. 5. What are you hiding from me behind your back? 6. An early settlement of the dispute is now quite a necessity. 7. No one can approve of such an inadequate conduct. 8. The members of the family were apparently used to his political perorations at the dinner table. 9. In spite of heavy casualties the attacking squad was pushing forward deep into the enemy lines. 10. At last their task could be considered fulfilled. 11. Neither of the suggested lines of approach suited the investigating team. 12. Undoubtedly it was the Chief's secretary calling again about the missing papers.

Exercise 7. Point out simple, compound, and complex sentences in the following texts. Observe the means of connection between various types of clauses. Consider also the means by which separate sentences are connected with one another. Translate into Russian.

1. One morning the old Water-rat put his head out of his hole. He had bright beady eyes and stiff grey whiskers, and his tail was like a long bit of black india-rubber. The little ducks were swimming about in the pond, looking just like

a lot of yellow canaries, and their mother, who was pure white with real red legs, was trying to teach them how to stand on their heads in the water.

"You will never be in the best society unless you can stand on your heads," she kept saying to them; and every now and then she showed them how it was done. But the little ducks paid no attention to her. They were so young that they did not know what an advantage it is to be in society at all.

"What disobedient children!" cried the old Water-rat; "they really deserve to be drowned."

"Nothing of the kind," answered the Duck, "every one must make a beginning, and parents cannot be too patient."

"Ah! I know nothing about the feelings of parents," said the Water-rat; "I am not a family man. In fact, I have never been married, and I never intend to be. Love is all very well in its way, but friendship is much higher. Indeed, I know nothing in the world that is either nobler or rarer than a devoted friendship." (*O. Wilde*)

2. Paula told the taxi to stop at the corner of Smith Street and the King's Road. She paused beside the grocer's shop on the corner and the grocer, who recognized her, bowed and smiled. She smiled a quick constricted smile and began to walk down the street... What she was going to do now was to look again at the house in Chelsea where she and Richard had lived. She knew, from something she had overheard Octavian saying that he lived there still. (*I. Murdoch*)

3. When we arrived home in Beverly Hills, news from the studio was encouraging. "Modern Times" was a great success.

But again I was faced with the depressing question: should I make another silent picture? I knew I'd be taking a great chance if I did. The whole of Hollywood had deserted silent pictures and I was the only one left. I had been lucky so far, but to continue with a feeling that the art of pantomime was gradually becoming obsolete was a discouraging thought. Besides, it was not easy to contrive silent action for an hour and forty minutes, translating wit into action and creating visual jokes every twenty feet of film, for seven or eight thousand feet. (*Ch. Chaplin*)

SIMPLE SENTENCE: UNEXPANDED AND EXPANDED SENTENCES

Exercise 1. Point out unexpanded and expanded sentences. State the part-of-speech characteristics and the syntactic function of the basic and expanding elements.

1. Some wall tiling was loose. 2. His connection has long been broken. 3. Without turning Jim gave a light chuckle. 4. I'll show you out. 5. The man was full of paternal goodwill. 6. But something has been happening. 7. The next instant she had recognized him. 8. This seems a problem. 9. The electric torch went out. 10. Do you attach importance to this discovery? 11. Why, Mary is in excellent spirits! 12. The newcomer rose obediently. 13. No one gives him credit for his achievement. 14. Did the second door have a key in the lock? 15. My dear fellow, you are pretty near the truth this time.

Exercise 2. Distinguish between obligatory and optional parts in the following sentences. Translate into Russian.

1. You haven't missed much. 2. Bill seemed rather reluctant. 3. Right you are. 4. He's got something on his mind. 5. I remember her well. 6. It's like a runaway horse. 7. The little girl was playing with a delectable puppy. 8. Nancy tore the letter open. 9. You shouldn't hurry me! 10. When will he change the style of his overcoat? 11. Tom ran himself out of breath. 12. The host beamed at his guests. 13. The incident weighed heavy on her mind. 14. The surface felt smooth. 15. Mary had a new carpet in her parlour. 16. She will make

a perfect wife. 17. Polly is walking her dog before going to bed. 18. Mrs Waley arranged the tulips in a vase on the stand. 19. Who can agree with such an unpractical idea? 20. Billy, bring your hands out of your pockets! 21. Jane laughed me into approval.

Exercise 3. Fill in the blanks with notional words and phrases paying attention to the syntactic types of the verbs. Choose the proper determiners and prepositions where necessary.

1. Who could expect such a ... ? 2. Fanny's heart beat
3. Put the ... into the 4. He brought a ... with
5. I can't think of a 6. We heard ... in 7. It was ... in the 8. What are you speaking to ... about? 9. ... has ... in 10. I was ... looking about 11. The ... came out into the 12. Did you take the ... to the ... ? 13. ... missed their ... terribly. 14. ... uttered a 15. She obviously felt ... among the 16. The ... tasted ... indeed! 17. The ... opens into the 18. Something fell ... to

Exercise 4. Fill in the blanks with functional words where necessary. Pay attention to the types of the verbs, as well as to the types of the nouns.

1. She gazed ... him ... admiration. 2. Mr Chadman was ... excellent mood ... morning. 3. It was ... kind ... him! 4. ... were some sandwiches ... table. 5. Who ... waiting ... you ... gate? 6. The weather kept ... fine. 7. I must be getting ... my task. 8. Who is ... letter ... ? 9. Will you help me ... work? 10. She dressed herself ... tweed coat. 11. I ... agree ... you ... question. 12. What have you got ... their opinion? 13. He was ... cleverest ... us all. 14. Mary looked ... Bob ... anxious eyes. 15. Where have you brought it ... ? 16. Say it ... me again. 17. How can you explain ... absence ... your aunt? 18. The friends were wandering ... streets idly.

Exercise 5. Expand the following sentences at your option. Pay attention to the types of the verbs.

1. Mr Tarry paused. 2. It was dark. 3. They were left. 4. Marcus retreated. 5. Her voice sounded. 6. His cheeks felt hot. 7. I couldn't remember. 8. The river was shining.

9. Moyra looked up. 10. They kept on working. 11. She gave a shiver. 12. He walked his horse. 13. They began to dislodge. 14. The young people danced themselves. 15. Mother bought cream cakes. 16. They moved along. 17. I want to see. 18. Her eyes opened. 19. Take care. 20. The woman breathed a sigh. 21. Who was trying? 22. There is some reason. 23. We are not afraid. 24. It has occurred. 25. The oranges tasted. 26. He may know. 27. Jill told Mary. 28. Who threatened? 29. I haven't heard. 30. The gun fired. 31. The tourists descended. 32. Tess frowned. 33. The boat was approaching.

Exercise 6. Decide which of the following sentences are syntactically complete and which are not. Fill in the vacant positions of the incomplete constructions. Translate into Russian.

1. The ball fell. The man fell over a boulder. The prices have fallen. 2. There was a whistle. There came a whistle. There sounded a sharp whistle. 3. The friends sat. The two women sat chatting. 4. He was looking intently. You look pale. Saunders looked in. Look out! 5. Are you feeling? The handle felt moist. I felt disgust. 6. Who will put the book? He put the receiver. We'll have to put up. Will you put it down for me? 7. Mary has given her mother. Don't give away. They have given up. Larry was given a piece of good advice. 8. Why hurry? Hurry up. Don't hurry me. I can't hurry with this work. 9. The sun was setting. They have set free. The prisoner was set free. I've set the clock. 10. She sent away. We sent out. The letter was sent by air-mail. I'm sending my nephew. 11. She stared. What are you staring at? The boy was staring in. 12. Who has answered? Can you answer my question? Try to answer yourself. 13. Translate into English. Please translate it on the spot. Be careful when translating. She translated for the Company. 14. He told his story again. Tell your father. Who has been telling it?

Exercise 7. Translate into English paying attention to rendering different types of verb constructions.

1. Они помолчали. 2. Они наговорились до хрипоты. 3. Вас не обманут. 4. Он не обманет. 5. Дети наплавались до синевы. 6. Посмотри внутрь. 7. Берегись! 8. Кто может

объяснить это правило? 9. Нужно объяснить им это снова. 10. Кто начнет? 11. Послышался звук выстрела. 12. Мотоцикл протарахтел мимо. 13. Отведите вашу собаку в сад. 14. Не приближайтесь ко мне! 15. Ковер был шелковистым на ощупь. 16. Все блюда были удивительно вкусны. 17. Что вы хотите на сладкое? 18. Мужчина пошел быстрее. 19. Они узнали друг друга лучше. 20. Слушатели продолжали кивать головами. 21. Она села за уроки. 22. Счетная машина вдруг отказала. 23. Мой собеседник изобразил любезную улыбку. 24. Цены падали. 25. Дождь не переставал. 26. Когда позвонить? 27. Его лицо побледнело. 28. Я потянулся за газетой. 29. Корабль достиг намеченного пункта. 30. Вы выглядите чудесно. 31. Запишите эту фразу. 32. Почему вы торопите ее? 33. Пленных выпустили. 34. Не рассказывайте этого никому. 35. Взвесьте, пожалуйста, мой багаж. 36. Кто выращивает такие красивые цветы?

Elliptical and One-Member Sentences

Exercise 1. Read the following dialogue passages. Point out incomplete (elliptical) sentences in them. Decide which parts of these sentences are deleted and why. Translate into Russian.

1. "When am I going to see you again?" he said, when she stood up to go. — "Do you want to?" — "Extraordinarily." — "But why?" — "Why not? You're the first lady I've spoken to for ten years. I'm not at all sure you're not the first lady I've ever spoken to." — "If we are going to see each other again, you mustn't laugh at me." — "Laugh at you! One couldn't. So when?" (*J. Galsworthy*)

2. "To-morrow's Sunday. I shall be seeing you?" — "If you will." — "What about the Zoo?" — "No, not the Zoo. I hate cages." — "Quite right. The Dutch garden near Kensington Palace?" — "Yes." (*J. Galsworthy*)

3. "Last week he tried to commit suicide," one waiter said. — "Why?" — "He was in despair." — "What about?" — "Nothing." — "How do you know it was nothing?" — "He has plenty of money." (*E. Hemingway*)

4. "You are the most beautiful dancer I've ever held in my arms." — "Captain Butler, you must not hold me so tightly. Everybody is looking." — "If no one were looking, would you care?" — "Captain Butler, you forget yourself." — "Not for a minute. How could I, with you in my arms?"
(*M. Mitchell*)

5. "I am sure, Mrs Failing, that you need not talk of 'making' people come to Cadover. There will be no difficulty, I should say." — "Thank you, my dear. Do you know who once said those exact words to me? — "Who?" — "Rickie's mother." — "Did she really?" — "My sister-in-law was a dear."
(*E.M. Forster*)

6. "I hear you behaved intolerably at lunch-time today." — "Who told you?" — "The twins." — "Well?" — "Well nothing. Let's have a look at your Latin prose." — "Oh Willy — I'm so wretched — sorry." — "Barbara?" — "Yes." — "And she?" — "I just annoy her." — "I have no comfort for you, Pierce. You will suffer. Only try to trap the suffering yourself. Crush it down in your heart like Odysseus did."
(*I. Murdoch*)

Exercise 2. Reconstruct the missing parts in the elliptical sentences. Observe the stylistic effect of the change.

1. "Will you come over and hear me play the piano?" — "I will." 2. "Are you kidding me?" — "No." 3. "You are not a member here, I presume." — "Why not?" 4. "I bet you completely forgot it." — "Not completely." 5. "I was lying the first time." — "You sure the first?" 6. "Would you mind if I go now?" — "Certainly not." 7. "Where is his home?" — "Chicago." 8. "What makes you think so?" — "Facts." 9. "I am suggesting that this is a possibility." — "Is what?" 10. "An enemy in our ranks? You really believe that?" — "Don't you?" 11. "We have got to act, and that without delay." — "But how?" 12. "Who else could have done it?" — "May be your brother?" 13. "I am not afraid of thinking and knowing." — "And of acting?" 14. "We know perfectly well what happened to him." — "What happened — yes. But why?" 15. "It seems to me that other and more convincing explanations can be found." — "Such as?"

Exercise 3. Translate into English paying attention to the structure and use of elliptical sentences.

1. А ты у коменданта был? — Ну был. 2. У нас еще одна новость. — Какая? 3. Не верите? — Да нет, верю. 4. Я только что встретил Сережу. — Где? — У входа в метро. 5. Вы обращались к лесничему? — Нет. Не подумал об этом. 6. Значит, наш драмкружок распускается? — Вот именно. 7. Еще чашечку кофе? — Если позволите. Сахару больше не нужно, спасибо. 8. Кто это вам наговорил таких вещей? — Как кто? Все говорят об этом. 9. Вы там были один? — Почему один? И Федор Петрович был. И Аня тоже. 10. Бумаги собрали? — Еще не все. 11. Вы меня хорошо слышите? — Не очень. — Может, мне перезвонить? — Да, пожалуйста. 12. Сколько еще ждать? — Не больше получаса, я думаю. 13. Сколько весит эта упаковка? — Что-то около восьми килограммов. 14. Давайте поскорее встретимся снова. — Когда и где? 15. Вам еще многому нужно поучиться. — Например? — Например, вежливости. 16. Вы согласны с предложением господина Медникова? — Не совсем. 17. Значит, она не придет? — Да нет, придет. Она передумала. 18. Итак, решение принято. — Наконец-то!

Exercise 4. Point out one-member sentences, state their structure and explain their meaning. Translate into Russian.

1. "... So you've come to join the forgotten men." A pause. "I'm Doctor Hope! At least I used to think I was Hope ..." 2. "Men and women, husbands and wives quarrel horribly, Shirley." — "Poor things! — poor, fallen, degenerate things! God made them for another lot — for other feelings." 3. "Chris!" he exclaimed, his face shocked, pained. "Can't you see that's all changed? From now on I'm going to make things up to you." — "All right, all right, my dear." Smiling she wiped her eyes. 4. "He was arrested last Thursday, at Brisighella. He defended himself desperately and wounded the captain of the squadron and a spy." — "Armed resistance; that's bad!" 5. The English masses wanted the products of new industries but had no cash to buy them. Hence the seizure of colonies to provide new outlets — and hence also the search beginning for capital outlets

in every part of the world, colonial or not. Hence, finally, the clash between all the different groups, each seeking outlets in the same finite world. 6. The door closed. Steps on the walk. Then car doors opening and closing. The motor throbbed, and the car went away. 7. All passengers for Flight 98 to gate four, please. No smoking till you are in the air. 8. He was coming in towards his first trap when he heard a shout from the bank near his cabin. "Roy. Roy MacNair!" 9. "I didn't know he had any other name but Andy," she said. "Thank goodness he isn't in jail." — "Poor old Andy," Roy said.

Exercise 5. Translate into English using one-member and elliptical sentence constructions where necessary.

1. Тишина. Ни звука в спящем саду. Мы, горожане, совсем не привыкли к этому. 2. Так вы придете? Я буду ждать вас. — Хорошо, хорошо. Буду точно в семь часов вечера. 3. Опять Митя выполнил домашнее задание не так, как было нужно. И снова получил нагоняй. — Бедный мальчик. Ведь он проболел почти месяц, неудивительно, что он отстал от класса. 4. Кто говорит? Саша? Накопец-то. Я уже думала, что ты уехал, не позвонив нам. 5. Сейчас курить нельзя. Подождите, пока самолет наберет высоту. 6. Вот. Опять выстрелы, слышите? — Да нет, какие там выстрелы. Это кто-то заводит мотоцикл. 7. Сегодня дождь с самого утра и до вечера. Ничего другого прогноз погоды не обещает. — В таком случае, нужно ехать поездом: самолет может задержаться. 8. Что с Дмитрием Степановичем? Почему его не было на совещании? — Уехал в срочную командировку. Кажется, в Ташкент. Или в Ашхабад. Точно не знаю. 9. Может, сделаем перерыв? Я вижу, вы здорово устали. — Нет, нисколько. Вы ошибаетесь. Не стоит прерывать работу. Еще полтора-два часа, и мы ее закончим. 10. Боже мой! Этот жакет — он так тебе не к лицу, Маша. Надень что-нибудь повеселее. — Может быть, розовое платье? — Очень хорошо. Только поторопись, мы опаздываем. 11. Звонок внизу. Наверное, почтальон. Откроешь? — Да, да, не беспокойся. 12. К вам снова этот человек. Говорит, по личному вопросу. — Ладно, пусть войдет. Разберемся.

Word Order

Exercise 1. Put the adverb at the head of the sentence.

Model: The ball fell down. Down fell the ball.

It fell down. Down it fell.

1. Tom came in. 2. A number of pears fell down. 3. The kittens jumped up. 4. He batted the balloon. It flew off — purple and extravagant. 5. Eliza said good night and walked quickly away. 6. The rocket flew up. 7. They went out. 8. She went off into peals of laughter. 9. A shattering peal of thunder blundered overhead; and the rain came down, slashing and sluicing. 10. They came in, laughing and shouting.

Exercise 2. Put the adverb at the head of the sentence.

Model: Tom is there. There is Tom.

He is there. There he is.

1. "She goes there," said Martin. 2. Her own house was there, at the top of the hill. 3. Ah! And she was here! 4. The morning of his news came then. 5. The rest of the monkeys came here. 6. Our bus comes now! 7. My brother comes here. 8. "He comes here," I said.

Exercise 3. Apply the following statements to new subjects.

Model: Arnold's father arrived last night. — So did we.

I told her that he was not alone. — Nor was she.

1. She's really been wonderful. 2. He used to come to his mother's every day. 3. She was so gay and so natural. 4. I haven't seen him yet. 5. We met him on the stairs. 6. I shall do anything in the world for you. 7. I never saw such a lot of people. 8. Luke was a man of action. 9. I have still had no word from them. 10. I shall be all right when I've had something to eat. 11. She's only been here two days. 12. She doesn't remember anything about it.

Exercise 4. Apply the following statements to the same subject.

Model: I'm sure you want to help us to get at the truth. —
So I do.

I have no right to ask you anything. — No more
you have.

1. I thought he was a very nice dentist. 2. You never thought of meeting him again. 3. You don't want to play with me. 4. My father always used to say he was the ablest man in the party. 5. I hope you had a pleasant journey down from London. 6. I think he might have done that. 7. You'll be leaving us soon, I suppose. 8. I think he is a very serious person. 9. You don't care what he thinks. 10. You might have said that before. 11. You must do exactly what you think fit. 12. I'm afraid you didn't eat a thing.

Exercise 5. Make the sentences emphatic by using full or partial inversion if possible.

a) 1. He walked round so slowly that it was clear he was seriously ill. 2. He talked so quickly that nobody could understand him. 3. The radio was turned on so softly that we couldn't hear anything. 4. He spoke to her so coolly that she got offended. 5. He plays so badly and he looks so wretched.

b) 1. Philip was so irritated that I decided to leave him alone. 2. He felt so tired that he had to stop a taxi. 3. His voice was so sad that she felt sorry for him. 4. I'm so frightfully nervous that I can't do anything now. 5. She sounded so furious that Rowan looked quite startled.

c) 1. As he was brave, as he was full of life, he was not stoical. 2. As June looked soft, there must be strength in her somewhere. 3. As Scarlett was weak, she was going home to Tara. 4. She has more sense than June, though she was a child; more wisdom. 5. The journey next day, though it was short, and the visit to his lawyer's, tired him. 6. Ralph moaned faintly. Though he was tired, he could not relax.

d) 1. Miss Smith was small and slight and angry. 2. He looked very ill. 3. Everyone looked so young. 4. He felt extraordinarily helpless. 5. She looked different and smoother, thought Nicola instantly. 6. She seemed happy, almost breathless. 7. At the sides and back of his head his hair was thick and grey. 8. Nora felt indignant at the suggestion that she needed a nurse. 9. He looked terribly ill, I thought. 10. Aunt Ann turned her old eyes from one to the other. Her look was indulgent and severe.

e) 1. It had never occurred to her before that she needed Melanie. 2. He had never felt George's presence without the

sense of being laughed at. 3. Fleur had never been so "fine", Holly so watchful, Val so stable-secretive, Jon so silent and disturbed. 4. She would glance up not once at the small hill where his house looked over the ocean. 5. He met June at the Smiths' not once. 6. She did not speak until that was done. 7. He did not discover that he had only eighteen pence till he reached Piccadilly. 8. I could not find a pattern that indicated his course of action anywhere in any of the information. 9. Eliza could be sure of herself only here, alone on the hill.

f) 1. Well, I wouldn't tell them anything if I were you. 2. Even if I had known the incident, it would not have occurred to me as important to mention. 3. She would have been retired if it had not been for her children. 4. If she should take him seriously, she would be forced to quarrel with him. 5. I had scarcely left home when it began to snow heavily. 6. I had no sooner read a few pages then she called me again. 7. I had hardly entered the room when the phone rang. 8. If I saw Jack much oftener I could help him. 9. If Carlos wanted us to see him he would send a telegram.

Exercise 6. Translate into English using inversion if possible.

a) 1. Я люблю работать по вечерам. — И я тоже. 2. Отец чувствует себя так же хорошо, как и я. — И все остальные тоже. 3. Я полагаю, что вы попытаетесь хорошо отдохнуть перед началом учебного года. — Я так и сделаю. 4. Я ничего ему не сказала. — И они тоже. 5. Я признаю, что я, возможно, ошиблась. — Вы действительно ошиблись. 6. Вы полагаете, что он знает, о чем говорит? — Да, я так думаю. Он действительно знает. 7. Вы хотите с ним встретиться? — Нет. — И мы тоже. 8. В тот вечер он был опять в хорошем настроении. — Да. 9. Вы цените жизнь? — Да. — И мы тоже. 10. Он говорит по-английски с акцентом. — И вы тоже. 11. Я думала, что вы отдыхали, когда мы позвонили вам. — Да, я действительно отдыхала. 12. Я полагаю, что в вашей комнате было все, что вы хотели. — Да. 13. В семь часов она уже хотела завтракать. — И мы тоже. 14. Что вы хотите? — Интересную книгу. — И я тоже. 15. Он большой любитель чтения. — Да, это так. 16. Боюсь, что вы очень устали. — Да, действительно. 17. Я была рада, что она ходила в театр. — И мы тоже. 18. Она много думает о вас. —

и он тоже. 19. Она очень внимательна и добра ко всем. — Да, это так. 20. Я думаю, что вы давно его не видели. — Это действительно так.

б) 1. «А вот и Том», — сказала Джейн. 2. «Вон она идет», — сказал Джон и пытался спрятаться за Джун. 3. Вон моя мама. 4. «Вот и еда идет!» — сказал Джеймс, кладя книгу на стол и усаживаясь. 5. Вон он стоит около метро! 6. А, вот вы где! 7. Вон сидят мои родители. 8. «Вот мы и дома», — радостно сказал Фейс.

с) 1. Все это, вероятно, не случилось бы, не будь это ее день рождения. 2. Какая холодная вода в реке! 3. Ни за что на свете я не пойду туда одна. 4. Хотя он и был взволнован новостями, он не мог удержаться от смеха, читая письмо от брата. 5. Она вдруг стала такой возбужденной, что мы не могли продолжать нашу беседу. 6. Будь я на вашем месте, я бы не сердилась на него. 7. Никогда в жизни она не видела такой прекрасной квартиры! 8. Как жарко и шумно было в зале! 9. Ирэн долго смотрела на отца. Лишь одно мгновение ее глаза просили о сострадании. 10. Никогда в жизни он так не сердился. 11. Дом на Робин Хилле, хотя и был закончен, оставался пустым. 12. Они мало говорили о своем путешествии на Кавказ. 13. В течение долгого времени мы плыли и не видели никаких огней. Да и берега мы не видели. 14. Будь я на вашем месте, я бы пошла и приготовила бутерброды. 15. Я не видела ее почти пять лет. Как она изменилась! 16. Этот человек не собирается смеяться и не собирается утешать ее. 17. Как бы Джейн ни устала, она всегда старалась быть добрее, чем обычно. 18. Не раз он ссылался на этот случай во время нашей беседы. 19. Какой обаятельной она была на том вечере! 20. Было так холодно, что мы не могли идти дальше. 21. Никогда они не казались такими внимательными и вежливыми. 22. Как бы я ни устала, я всегда должна быть веселой. 23. Том не появился в обед. Его также не было на своем месте и во время ужина. 24. Только когда он вышел из своей комнаты, он услышал шум внизу. 25. Так убедительно звучал его голос, что ему все поверили. 26. Никогда раньше они не слышали, чтобы Том так разговаривал. 27. Ни тогда, ни позже я не испытывала ни малейшего желания следовать его примеру.

28. Мало же они знали об этом маленьком городе! 29. Никогда в жизни я не думала, что буду рада их видеть опять. 30. Она не понимала Джона. Да она и не пыталась его понять. 31. Только на лестнице она узнала его лицо. 32. Джек так неожиданно закричал, что Ральф даже подпрыгнул. 33. Присмотрите за больным. В случае, если он что-то скажет, дайте мне знать в любое время. 34. Жизнь Елены не была легкой, не была она и счастливой. 35. Какой прекрасный у него голос! 36. Ни на мгновение он не удивился подарку, который ему сделали друзья.

Exercise 7. Comment on the word order in the following sentences.

a) 1. I never saw him so depressed. — Neither did we. 2. I shall see him tomorrow and the next day and always. — So shall we. 3. There was a murmur in the room. 4. Were I you, I would be very careful about the people I get to know. 5. Had you come earlier you would have found him at home. 6. Should you meet her there, give her this message, please. 7. What should I have done without you? 8. May I ask you a question now? 9. What were they giving at the opera tonight? 10. At what time did you dine? 11. Why do you speak to me like that? 12. Where is your hat?

b) 1. "Helen doesn't know much," said Father. "Well, she is only three," said Mother. "Neither did you at that age." 2. "I'm glad that's over." — "So am I." 3. Not till then did they see the disaster in the corridor. 4. Not until then did he remember the hat he still had in his hand. 5. For many a time did I sit on the banks of the blue and green lake. 6. How far away they were! 7. How beautiful and sad that was! 8. How beautiful the words were! 9. Here is another plate for the nursery children. 10. "Where's Sally?" — "Here I am, mother!" 11. "There comes coffee!" exclaimed Rosa. 12. Away went my brother. 13. On no account would he have pulled up to help him. 14. Margot said little about the incident on Friday night; nor did she mention it on Sunday when she stayed at Alex's apartment. 15. Never once, however, did the old lady complain of pain. 16. Luke, young as he was, was one of the best of them. 17. So tired were the hunters that they decided to spend the night on the bank of the stream. 18. No matter how busy we were, however, McLeod would solemnly

take her full twenty minutes in the kitchen, consuming vast quantities of bread and toast. 19. I said dryly, "Perhaps we'd better start, Mr Coleman." — "Right you are, nurse." 20. So odd sounded his words to me that I could not believe him. 21. So worried she looked that I couldn't leave her alone. 22. Only when Irene was with him did he lose his double consciousness. 23. He saw Bicket inflating a balloon; little was visible of his face or figure behind that rosy circumference. 24. Little moved though he ever was by public matters, this event impressed his fancy. 25. I would never dream of consulting him had I been in her place. 26. Had I not quite made up my mind I should not have spoken to you.

Exercise 8. Translate into English paying attention to specific patterns of word order.

1. Никогда в жизни я не буду брать на себя подобную ответственность без твоего совета. 2. Только тогда они поняли подлинный смысл всего, что произошло. 3. В дверях стоял Петр, приветствуя нас всех своей неотразимой улыбкой. 4. Вот описание тех картин, о которых вы мне говорили. 5. Вы должны перечитать эту главу с самого начала. — Так я и сделаю. 6. Налево в углу стоял высокий торшер, а на стене прямо перед нами висел чудесный персидский ковер. 7. Вон идет управляющий. Поговорите с ним о вашем деле. 8. Вверх взмыла ракета и рассыпалась сверкающими звездами в темнеющем небе. 9. Я бы предпочел бифштекс и чашку кофе. — И я тоже. 10. Не пора ли отказаться от вашей затеи? — А зачем нам от нее отказываться? 11. Я бы посоветовал рассказать эту историю Павлику. — Мы ему ее уже рассказали. 12. Вдали, за рядами скал, было море, сверкающее на утреннем солнце. 13. Лишь в романах можно встретиться с подобными совпадениями. 14. Я не хочу тратить время на эту игру. — Я тоже. Пойдем лучше погуляем по набережной.

COMMUNICATIVE TYPES OF SENTENCES

Exercise 1. Point out declarative, interrogative, and imperative sentences. Distinguish between affirmative and negative constructions among them. Translate into Russian.

1. Don't repeat these accusations without checking them. 2. I'm sorry — there isn't time to explain. 3. May I speak to your husband, please? 4. Is not everything under control? 5. Don't you dare to ask me such a question another time! 6. Would you mind repeating the telephone number? 7. Let's not become personal. 8. Aren't they glad to see us in their company? 9. Will she not receive me now? 10. I can hardly believe his words. 11. There can't be anything wrong with the computer. 12. They shouldn't start without consulting the weathermen. 13. I'm not to be talked into consent. 14. Won't she marry Jack? 15. Don't let's break the packets open. 16. Isn't there anything we can do? 17. Don't fail to follow the instructions closely. 18. Has he never flown passenger planes? 19. Go ahead, I'm ready to put down the message. 20. Haven't we been trying to reach you all these days?

Exercise 2. Change the following affirmative sentences into negative ones (give different versions where possible).

1. Some of them have already been there. 2. It was so strange! 3. There is some reason in her words. 4. But she does know Norman. 5. Now the explanation makes sense. 6. The topic will lose its significance by that time. 7. This certainly will be great fun. 8. Then he sounded very cheerful,

too. 9. Everyone seemed quite perturbed. 10. We were lucky to have caught the five o'clock liner. 11. The text is to be revised, of course. 12. Ann will be coming, too. 13. A ball-pen like this can be found anywhere. 14. I was puzzled by many things.

Exercise 3. State the types of the following questions. Translate into Russian.

1. Can you fly this aircraft and land it? 2. What does he have to say? 3. Wasn't it an adventure? 4. So, they did take part in the reception, after all? 5. Will you do it alone, or will you have someone to help you? 6. Do we read a book for the book's sake? 7. A good deal has been written about the importance of practice, hasn't it? 8. Has it been a monotonous day, or have you come across some diversions? 9. At what range will the plane show on the radar? 10. Do you care to comment or don't you? 11. Is it all over, or do we have to go through the ordeal from the start? 12. Isn't it a lovely bit of jewelry?

Exercise 4. Ask questions about the italicized words type.

1. *The show* didn't amuse us very much. 2. The grandmother *was mending* as usual. 3. Margaret cannot keep *a secret*. 4. We went out *through a side door* into the dark street. 5. Maria stood in the doorway *with a large tray*. 6. Anyone would think *I was cruel to them*. 7. I watched her *fasten green leaves in her hair*. 8. There was *something important* in the paper. 9. The dinner was *quite a substantial affair*. 10. The stewardess opened the door *to the passenger deck*. 11. The captain *was pacing* the narrow cabin nervously. 12. You should try *to relax* as much as you can.

Exercise 5. Think of responses of various kinds (categorical, non-categorical) to the following questions.

1. What makes you think I value his opinion particularly? 2. Did you know Mr Jacobson in his prime? 3. Don't you find anything familiar in the idea? 4. Was it difficult for Fanny to believe his words? 5. Are you sure Uncle Samuel didn't expect that guest? 6. Would it matter much if I refused to stay? 7. Are they abandoning their plan? 8. Am I to tell him outright how matters stand? 9. Can things be any

harder than they are now? 10. Has he ever sounded convincing? 11. Don't you always appreciate frankness? 12. Has he ever regretted the wrongs he has done her? 13. Don't you think Aunt Agatha has preserved her good looks wonderfully? 14. Have you ever come across a more controversial statement than that? 15. Is he topmost in his profession now?

Exercise 6. Make up an alternative question out of each of the given pairs of statements.

1. These decisions were based on ignorance. These decisions were based on competence. 2. This satellite can be seen with a naked eye. This satellite can't be seen with a naked eye. 3. The liner will take off in half an hour. The liner will be taking off in a few moments. 4. She felt quite secure. She felt somewhat insecure. 5. Anybody can say so. Nobody can say so. 6. Those people desire possessions. Those people desire the well-being of others. 7. The truth is always beautiful. The truth may sometimes be very ugly. 8. They drove back with the car radio playing. They drove back with the car radio turned off. 9. The nurse tucked in her blanket and fetched her a hot-water bottle. The nurse passed by without paying attention to her. 10. The information came from the Colonial Office files. The information came from the Ministry of Defence.

Exercise 7. Make up questions of various kinds to suit the following answers.

1. Well, it depends. 2. It's hard to say. 3. Not me. 4. Sure I will. 5. Wise of him. 6. So do I. 7. Next door. 8. Not in the least. 9. Nothing of the kind. 10. You may take my word for it. 11. Some other time. 12. Why not? 13. What nonsense! 14. I think I do. 15. Hardly so. 16. Of course not. 17. Who else could it be! 18. None. 19. Neither of them. 20. Not yet. 21. By all means. 22. I believe you are right. 23. Yes, I think so. 24. That's too bad. 25. Why should he? 26. More or less.

Exercise 8. Change the following statements into disjunctive questions.

1. You cannot give me a definite answer. 2. They were married several weeks later. 3. The inspector made an affirmative gesture. 4. The tower clock chimed the hour. 5. There are no oranges left in the vase. 6. Mr Raymond shrugged his shoulders.

ders. 7. There is no motive behind their decision. 8. The woman was becoming a nervous wreck. 9. The situation became strained. 10. The TV set has been turned on all the time. 11. The car bomb didn't go off. 12. The West European attitude has fuelled the arms race in the region. 13. There was an amusement in the girl's eyes. 14. Police has uncovered plenty of evidence.

Exercise 9. Answer the following disjunctive questions confirming the speaker's supposition.

1. He didn't expect us so early, did he? 2. Our little experiment proved the point, didn't it? 3. There isn't much to be regretted, is there? 4. The telephone call came just in time, didn't it? 5. You're hinting that the letter hasn't been posted, aren't you? 6. We shall see her among the guests, shan't we? 7. The rally was held on Tuesday, wasn't it? 8. I am a total stranger here, aren't I? 9. They oughtn't to have suspected him, ought they? 10. You won't keep me in the dark, will you? 11. She's in mind something else, hasn't she? 12. His blunder remained unnoticed, didn't it? 13. The man is to be the first to speak, isn't he? 14. There must be a simpler explanation, mustn't there? 15. This won't be a great pleasure, will it?

Exercise 10. Contradict the following statements (presented as such or in the form of questions) by using intent affirmative or negative constructions.

Model: 1. You know this man very well, don't you? — Oh no, I don't know him at all. 2. He can't speak French, can he? — But yes, he can. He speaks French fluently.

1. Talent doesn't want any schooling, does it? 2. Oranges taste bitter, don't they? 3. You don't like portraiture. 4. O. Henry's stories make you drowsy. 5. Playing chess doesn't require much skill, does it? 6. Little Tommy has never been to the Zoo, has he? 7. Using computers makes our mind lazy, doesn't it? 8. Anyone can be a poet. 9. Aren't heart and mind the same thing? 10. An exception to a rule is its proof, isn't it? 11. Reading books makes our own experience unnecessary, doesn't it? 12. Knowledge is more important than wisdom. 13. Law is always just, isn't it? 14. A good beginning is all the battle. 15. A tree can be judged by its bark, can't it? 16. Easier done than said, isn't it?

Exercise 11. Respond to the following sentences by interrogative constructions expressing surprise or disbelief.

Model: Aunt Emma is no longer angry with you. — Isn't she indeed?

Is it really so? Are you quite sure?

1. One can't be certain of his attitude. 2. Marina's parents come from Siberia. 3. They say, Mike has had a promotion jump. 4. You may get a plane to fly to Borneo any day of the week. 5. Gregory's portrait wasn't painted by Schultz. 6. I have never learned to drive a car. 7. She is leaving for good. 8. He is no more than an upstart. 9. Her one idea is to stick to her story which can't be true. 10. Shakespeare's plays are full of far-fetched exaggerations. 11. What he says is reasonable, but the way he puts it is simply rude. 12. Listening to this kind of music is never a pleasure. 13. Mary and Fred will be at the dances, too. 14. For all I know, Jack is no football-player.

Exercise 12. Translate into English paying attention to interrogative sentences.

1. Какой писатель вам больше нравится — Диккенс или Теккерея? — Я предпочитаю Теккерея. 2. Значит, Маша совсем не любит музыку? Не может быть! — Представь себе, это так! 3. Неужели эта невзрачная брошь стоит так дорого? — Вы находите ее невзрачной? 4. Когда можно поговорить с директором? — В понедельник с часу до трех. 5. Почему они еще не ушли? — Они хотят еще о чем-то спросить. 6. Когда приезжает Семен? — Кажется, завтра утром. 7. Он уже совершеннолетний? — По-моему, да. 8. Будет ли продолжение? — Конечно, будет. 9. Федор Петрович не делает доклада на конференции. — Не делает? Вы уверены? 10. Сколько времени еще продлится собрание? — Думаю, полчаса, не больше. 11. Почему транзистор не работает? — Наверное, истощились батарейки. Давай, я заменю их. 12. Слыхал? Только что мы запустили новую космическую лабораторию. — Здорово! 13. Почему Гриша такой грустный сегодня? — Он кажется тебе грустным? 14. Куда ты положила словарь? — Он под грамматикой, вон там, на открытой полке. 15. Какое расстояние от Иркутска до Абакана? — А зачем тебе? 16. Как зовут Петрищева? — Имя самое обыкновенное, но я его всегда забываю. Спроси у Бори. 17. Когда

же наконец ты будешь готова? Мы опаздываем. 18. Неужели ты еще не понял? — Чего не понял? 19. Сколько раз я должна повторять тебе, что нельзя есть конфеты до завтрака? — Больше не буду. 20. Сколько денег тебе нужно? — Тысяч пятьдесят, думаю, хватит.

Exercise 13. Distinguish between commands, requests of various kinds, and wishes. Translate into Russian.

1. Have a lovely time. 2. Don't, for goodness sake, let us interrupt the singing. 3. Get back to your seat, won't you? 4. Will you have a look into my notes? 5. Keep calling. She may come any time. 6. May their travel be safe and happy. 7. Tell him to report to the assistant manager. 8. Have a cigarette, will you? 9. Hear him play this piece, Nellie! 10. Pray, believe me. 11. Do understand the course of events if you are a man! 12. You had better take a little time to think, darling. 13. Let them join us tomorrow, too. 14. Do be quiet, Jane. 15. Let's not start our discussion anew. I've had enough of arguing. 16. You should do your duty.

Exercise 14. Make the following requests more urgent or polite.

1. Tell me now. 2. Sign your name. 3. Clear the desk. 4. Take off your overcoats. 5. Switch on the vacuum-cleaner. 6. Boil the water. 7. Stand to one side. 8. Mind the clock. 9. Don't let's postpone it. 10. Tell her to come. 11. Connect me with the chief operator. 12. Do me a favour. 13. Remember me to your parents. 14. Stop arguing with me. 15. Don't interrupt me. 16. Repeat your words. 17. Call another time. 18. Press the knob on your left. 19. Change the batteries. 20. Get it started. 21. Relax. 22. Give it a push. 23. Help me with this job. 24. Fix the carpet right there. 25. Forget it. 26. Change the bed-clothes.

Exercise 15. Forbid the action expressed in the following statements and request by using sentences of various kinds.

1. Nancy is shutting the door to the nursery. 2. Let's speak to him now. 3. I want to take your bike. 4. Now I'll switch on the washing machine. 5. Peter is staring at us open-mouthed. 6. Baking in the sun a bit will be a pleasure, Dad. 7. I'll order two more ices. 8. The handle should be turned

counter clockwise, should it not? 9. Let her stay in the country. 10. Floy will be watering the flower-beds, won't she? 11. Sam is preparing to make a detailed report. 12. Now I'll be putting the parcels into the carry-all. 13. Will you let me fill in the form?

Exercise 16. Translate into English paying attention to imperative sentences.

1. Огонь очень опасен для леса, поэтому, когда вы гуляете или работаете в лесу, не бросайте горящих спичек на землю. Сначала погасите спичку, потом бросайте. Не оставляйте горящих костров. Раскладывайте костер подалеже от деревьев, предварительно расчистив для него участок земли. Если вы заметили огонь в лесу, немедленно сделайте все, чтобы погасить его. Выкопайте канаву на пути огня, пустите встречный огонь, созовите людей. Давайте бережь лес от пожаров!

2. Это упражнение нужно делать, поставив ноги на ширину плеч. Положите руки на талию, отведите локти в стороны. Наклоны начали! Наклоняйтесь влево, так. Теперь выпрямитесь. Наклоняйтесь вправо, так. Теперь выпрямитесь. То же самое вперед. То же самое назад. Продолжайте. Так. Ускорьте темп. Хорошо. Теперь еще быстрее: влево, вправо, вперед, назад. Продолжайте не останавливаясь. Ну достаточно. Расслабьтесь.

3. Могу я видеть господина Строева? — По какому делу? — По вопросу о рекламациях на приемники предпоследней партии. Пожалуйста, доложите обо мне немедленно. Дело срочное, в отделе волнуются. — Вы Миронов? Ведь вам было назначено на девять, не так ли? — Да, на девять. Но меня задержали именно в связи с рекламациями. Так вы доложите? — Хорошо. Подождите, пожалуйста, в приемной. У директора посетитель. Можете посмотреть свежие газеты — вон там, на журнальном столике.

Exercise 17. State what kind of stimulus communication (statement, question, request) is presupposed by each of the following responses.

1. I can't do what you are asking me. 2. This is a strange idea. 3. Who do you think so? 4. Unfortunately, I am not informed. 5. The film is still showing here. 6. Oh, I'm so

glad she is aboard! 7. But he is not a judge in such matters. 8. As you say. 9. It won't be very easy. 10. I did meet him, though I forget when and where. 11. Go ahead, we are listening carefully. 12. I'd give plenty to be together with them at this moment. 13. It's been a pleasure. 14. Are you quite sure? 15. Just a moment. 16. Personally, I don't approve of the scheme. 17. Naturally, there is some risk in the attempt. 18. Are you determined to defend your point? 19. No, I don't mean that. 20. You may, if this is your intention. 21. I am at a loss. 22. Oh, impossible! 23. I am not afraid at all! 24. Something must be done, no doubt about it.

Exercise 18. Distinguish between exclamatory and non-exclamatory constructions of different communicative purposes. Translate into Russian.

1. What a nuisance he is! 2. How can I know about her intentions! 3. Oh, stop it! Please, stop it! 4. Oh, that Jane were not so touchy! 5. Do believe me, Madam. 6. You did want to ask me something, didn't you? 7. How do you know? 8. How very clever you've become! And so unexpected, too! 9. How kind of her! 10. No more of that, pray! 11. Phil? That early! 12. Can't stand his provocations any longer. 13. I'm so sorry, Jack! 14. If only I could speak to her now! 15. Just fancy this happening to the Old Man! 16. Oh, what a beautiful day! 17. How wonderfully she dances! 18. That was a crazy idea from the very start. 19. God forbid, I didn't mean to offend them! 20. But Tommy is such a bore!

Exercise 19. Change the following non-exclamatory sentences into exclamatory.

1. We couldn't see him on that occasion. 2. The music is lovely. 3. It was naughty of her. 4. Don't repeat such silly words. 5. The sight is disgusting. 6. Listening to that man is tiresome. 7. Her green frock is becoming her. 8. Read it again. 9. Who told you I don't like the opera? 10. It will be a pleasure to see her among us. 11. The plane is tossing horribly in the storm. 12. She is doing the sonata wonderfully. 13. Don't open the window, it's too cold in here. 14. It is time the performance were over. 15. How can he know so many languages? 16. The sun is shining brightly again.

Exercise 20. Translate into English paying attention to sentence structures of various communicative purposes.

1. Как мне увидеть его? 2. Вы разобрались в этом деле? 3. Нет, не там. 4. Какая дивная ночь! 5. Не могу поверить! 6. Как грациозно она танцует! 7. Ах, если бы это было так! 8. Как здесь душно! 9. Какой маленький рояль! 10. Но это совсем не ее почерк! 11. Вас кто-то спрашивает внизу. 12. Опять сигареты! 13. Почему бы нам не сходить завтра в кино? 14. Не надо больше кофе, спасибо. 15. Какая забавная картинка! 16. Почему не пригласить их в зал? 17. Как убедительно вы говорили! 18. Подумать только, Миша уже стал врачом! 19. Неужели им не позволят пройти на набережную? 20. Алло, алло, почему вы замолчали? 21. Это был тот самый капитан. 22. Разве вы никогда не имели дело с аквалангом? 23. Как вкусно! 24. Наконец-то ее щечки порозовели! 25. Вы можете записать это в свои блокноты. 26. Почему никто не отвечает на звонок? 27. Ну и переводчик! 28. Не можете ли вы пересесть к окну? 29. Боже мой, опять на ней эта нелепая кофта! 30. Сколько с нас? 31. С какой стати выслушивать эти незаслуженные упреки? 32. Смотри, Костя опять дуется! 33. В комнате кто-то есть. 34. Он говорит, что он музыкант, и я готова этому поверить. 35. Вот ваше заявление, оно не подписано. 36. Оставайся, где стоишь. 37. И любой поступил бы точно так же, не правда ли? 38. Давай, прыгай! 39. Какой ты неуклюжий, Саша! 40. Какое облегчение! 41. Вы пришли за билетом, не так ли? 42. Не понимаю, повторите, пожалуйста.

Exercise 21. Comment on the sentences containing reported speech. Translate into Russian.

1. Sondra asked her to keep the door open. 2. I refused to go into detail. 3. They repeated their request for accommodation in the hotel. 4. Everyone expressed surprise and admiration. 5. She remarked that she had no idea of what modern pop style was. 6. Mike called their arguments just so much nonsense. 7. We thanked them, and rose to go. 8. She gave an exclamation of surprise. 9. We refused to believe their words. 10. He said it was a pleasure to see them at his place. 11. We asked her to sing us some more songs in this

style. 12. Bobby's mother forbade him to use such rude words. 13. He implored the doctors to let him leave the hospital before the holiday.

Exercise 22. Render the following declarative sentences into direct and indirect speech representation using introductory formulas at your option. Mind the sequence of tenses. Change the structure of the sentences as required by the rendering.

1. We're all under the obligation to abide by the law. 2. The girl didn't smile at all. 3. I am not going to be ordered about by them. 4. She's got a queer way of speaking. 5. One can never be too sure. 6. You'll have to be careful. 7. My leg isn't feeling quite all right. 8. It doesn't matter in the least. 9. I won't interfere in this delicate affair. 10. But Jack is not qualified to work as an agronomer. 11. I can swear it was Nellie. 12. It wasn't very cleverly managed. 13. I've just been wanting to see you. 14. Something is coming back to me.

Exercise 23. Render the following interrogative sentences into direct and indirect speech representation. Give different versions of the rendering. Mind the sequence of tenses.

1. Do you really mean what you are saying? 2. Can you think of any reason for their sudden departure? 3. Did they find him eligible? 4. Shall we start right away? 5. But you do agree, don't you? 6. That gave them their excuse, didn't it? 7. Must we have our luggage registered just here on the ground floor, or somewhere else? 8. Shall we meet tomorrow or next Sunday? 9. This is Mr Newman, isn't it? 10. Are we going on board, or shall we take a walk on the embankment? 11. Is it giving you pleasure to read in a crowded bus? 12. Have they spoken to the laboratory assistant? 13. Did they fill in the forms before getting accommodation? 14. How shall we handle the device? 15. Which of them was the singer? 16. What is it all about? 17. But why, in God's name?

Exercise 24. Render the following commands, requests, wishes and greetings into direct and indirect speech representation. Give different versions of the rendering where possible.

1. Do as I ask you, will you? 2. Let events take their course. 3. Never say it again. 4. You are not going to disturb him now!

5. Let's leave it at that. 6. Don't let's resume this useless discussion. 7. Let them come when they please. 8. Stand to one side, will you? 9. Can you give me his telephone number, please? 10. Don't read so loud! 11. We wish you good luck. 12. May I come in? 13. Attention! 14. Have some more cake, will you? 15. Do start the engine.

Exercise 25. Render the following exclamatory sentences into direct and indirect speech representation completing the situations at your option where required. Give different versions of the rendering.

1. What a place! 2. How beautiful she was! 3. Oh, if only it were so! 4. To think that it's only the beginning! 5. God, how bored I am! 6. What nonsense! 7. But she's charming! 8. Wonderful! 9. There is nothing like a cup of tea with lemon! 10. But it's ages since I saw her! 11. Oh, no, I've had enough of that! 12. Impossible!

Exercise 26. Translate into English using various patterns of reported speech.

1. Он сказал, что предпочитает послушать что-нибудь классическое. 2. Сейчас она предложит нам посмотреть ее альбомы. 3. Командир приказал бойцам строиться. 4. Наташа просила нас передать вам сердечный привет. 5. Поль выразил восхищение картиной. 6. Он назвал это чепухой. 7. Председатель призвал собравшихся соблюдать тишину. 8. Он воскликнул, что целую вечность не видел нас. 9. Папа велел Алеше помочь сестренке. 10. Я очень просил их не делать этого. 11. Он попросил ее повторить адрес. 12. Мы ответили, что никогда не согласимся на изменение программы соревнований. 13. Я возразил, указав на ошибку в рассуждении. 14. Мы поблагодарили и отказались от помощи. 15. Я пожелал ей доброй ночи. 16. Мы их приветствовали. 17. Секретарша сказала, чтобы мы подождали немного. 18. Попроси Веру перевести первый параграф. 19. Оратор попросил внимания. 20. Михаил поспешил попрощаться. 21. Как он умолял ее не уезжать! 22. «Как, разве вас не предупредили об этом?» — удивилась Елена Ивановна. 23. Руководитель проекта предложил снова проверить расчеты.

PARTS OF THE SENTENCE

Subject

Exercise 1. Point out the subject in the following sentences and state what it is expressed by. Translate into Russian.

1. You couldn't define it more precisely! 2. It never rains, but it pours! 3. Two plus two makes four. 4. There was a tall lamp-post beside the packing house. 5. What is the meaning of all this? 6. A few more of these is all that is needed. 7. People don't easily recognize their faults. 8. Dark blue is not your colour for a costume. 9. Who will be the second in command? 10. Which of them is the President? 11. To be or not to be, that is the question. 12. Smoking is not allowed. 13. One can't be too sure. 14. How much do they offer? 15. They say it's about ten miles from here. 16. The third may be not taken into account. 17. Your "i" must be dotted. 18. Will half of the sum be enough? 19. The brave won't lay down their arms. 20. Never is a long time. 21. Here is a brighter torch for Jim.

Exercise 2. In each of the following passages distinguish between the subject-substitute and its antecedent. Translate into Russian.

1. A young man in a cycling suit cleared his way through the ring of bystanders. He knelt down promptly beside the injured man and called for water. 2. Mr Brett would be back this evening. That would liven things up. She would tell him what they had said about him. That would make him laugh.

3. Amelia opened the case, and, giving a little cry of delighted affection, seized the boy and embraced him a hundred times. It was a miniature of himself, very prettily done... 4. The fields were too big. It gave Ossie agoraphobia if he looked at them too long from his bedroom window. 5. It struck her as curious that she had repulsed him. Was it because she had moral scruples? Was it at bottom because she did not care for him? 6. Then, as she turned away she added: "But you let Constance do just as she likes!" This was her sole bitter comment on the episode... 7. There was only one quality in a woman that appealed to him — charm; and the quieter it was, the more he liked it. And this one had charm, shadowy as afternoon sunlight on those Italian hills and valleys he had loved.

Exercise 3. Distinguish definite personal, indefinite personal and impersonal sentences as expressed by their pronominal subjects. Translate into Russian.

1. Things were going on smoothly. 2. You cannot eat your cake and have it. 3. Can you give me a light? 4. People generally don't like being ordered about. 5. It was getting darker and darker. 6. We were too tired to enjoy the show properly. 7. They don't like cowards in the mountains. 8. What are we normally supposed to do in a situation like that? 9. Some don't like light music, others don't like classical music. 10. How can one account for his refusal? 11. There was no one on the stairs. 12. It was broad daylight when we started. 13. What can I do for you? 14. Could one do anything for them at all? 15. Many will support his idea, while not a few will find no appeal in it. 16. Man changes nature, but together with nature he changes himself, too. 17. Who can tell the number of scintillating stars above our heads? 18. You look at the picture of the great master, and you forget that it is painted with colours on a piece of canvas: every detail of it is life itself.

Exercise 4. Translate into English, paying attention to the expression of the subject (definite personal, indefinite personal, impersonal).

1. Кто не знает имени этого человека! 2. Любо́й покажет вам дорогу на озеро. 3. Разве вы не пользуетесь очками для чтения? 4. Вы открываете роман на любой странице, начинаете читать, и окружающее перестает существовать.

для вас. 5. Документы принято подписывать под текстом справа. 6. Становится сыро, надень кофточку. 7. Как обстоят дела во второй лаборатории? 8. В это трудно поверить. 9. Говорят, что лето будет теплое. 10. Никто не хотел пропустить такое зрелище. 11. Человек всегда жаждал знаний. 12. Мы чувствуем себя счастливыми, когда можем принести пользу окружающим. 13. О чем нужно попросить его? 14. Номер для вас приготовили, можете занять его в любое время. 15. Какой спектакль ставят в среду вечером? 16. Мороз. Через неделю река будет покрыта льдом. 17. Когда думаешь о технических достижениях человечества, испытываешь чувство гордости за него и одновременно чувство тревоги за его дальнейшую судьбу.

Exercise 5. Consider the use of the infinitive and the gerund in the function of the subject. Point out the constructions with the anticipatory *it*. Change the non-anticipatory constructions into the corresponding anticipatory ones and vice versa.

Model: 1. Growing flowers requires care and devotion. →

It requires care and devotion growing flowers.

2. To go under sail was such a pleasure! → *It* was such a pleasure to go under sail!

1. Participating in the preliminary matches gave the sportsmen the necessary confidence. 2. It was next to impossible to overcome his stubbornness. 3. Was it so very important having the script finished by the end of the month? 4. Watching the performances of these great actors opened for me new truths of life. 5. It's a joy to see you under our roof. 6. It's no use arguing about the matter. 7. Not seeing Cecil among the guests surprised me immensely. 8. To apply the rule of permutation won't do in this case. 9. Losing the game was a great disappointment. 10. Isn't it a great advantage to have so retentive a memory? 11. Pretending being older seems rather strange. 12. To be an expert in one's field requires a lifetime of effort.

Exercise 6. Translate into Russian, paying attention to the pronoun *it* used as the subject.

1. It is Clarence speaking, don't you recognize me? 2. It was so difficult to remember those rows of figures. 3. It was there and then that I saw the futility of his efforts. 4. It looks

like rain. 5. It is someone else's pen. 6. It wasn't any use trying to make one's voice heard over the general noise. 7. It wasn't tactful, you should apologize. 8. It was too late for them to continue their talk. 9. Why, it was only yesterday that I had the confirmation of the news! 10. It is to the operator that he is nodding, not to you. 11. The happy end of this film can hardly be called its drawback; to my mind, it should rather be considered as its merit. 12. But it is unbelievable, he can't have left without letting us know. 13. It is the skills of the young workers that are just being discussed at the manager's office.

Exercise 7. Use constructions with the emphatic *it* to answer the following questions.

Model: Who answered the bell, Mary or Floy? — *It was Floy that answered the bell, not Mary.*

1. They met her on the bridge, didn't they? Or was it at the boating station? 2. Did you yourself speak to the assistant professor, or did Margaret speak to him? 3. Oliver must have come from New Zealand. Or does he come from Australia? 4. The liner takes off at nine. Or will it be earlier? 5. The head-master will help us with the fixing of the machine tool. Or shall we apply to the consulting engineer? 6. The second point is to be revised. Or shall we revise the first point, too? 7. What was the source of the food poisoning — fish or meat? 8. Can Mr Shilov be entrusted with the task? Or will it be safer to charge Mrs Pavlova with it? 9. Did Fred win the race? Or was Bobby the winner? 10. Is he upstairs, or is he waiting for us in the car? 11. Will you go there by sea, or do you prefer a plane? 12. Is she growing azaleas or roses in her garden?

Exercise 8. Fill in the blanks with *it* or *there* to suit the corresponding meanings of the sentences.

1. a) ... was too windy. ... was no use going to the beach. b) ... was no wind, though ... was very cold. 2. a) ... was day already. ... was a ride in the country to look forward to. b) ... was still a day to spare. ... was lucky. 3. a) ... wasn't light enough. ... was difficult to read. b) ... was light coming through the trees. ... was hope in it. 4. a) ... was a great

joy to get the news of our team's victory. ... was a celebration ahead. b) ... was joy written all over his face. ... was no sham. 5. a) ... could be anybody. ... was difficult to see through the mist. b) ... was nobody in the house. ... could be no mistake about it. 6. a) ... was not much to be added, and ... was a relief. b) ... was too much to be said about him, ... was felt by everyone present. 7. a) ... is another letter from Polly, isn't ... fine? b) ... was another of his letters, and ... was a lot of bitterness expressed there. 8. a) Is ... so serious? Is ... really much to be worried about? b) ... is nothing serious about it. ... is no cause for anxiety whatsoever. 9. a) ... is as ... should be. And from now on ... will be a steady tendency for improvement. b) ... should be another alternative still. ... is always preferable to have more than one possibility to choose from. 10. a) ... is about ten already. ... is time to start. b) ... is all the time we need. ... is no need to be in a hurry.

Exercise 9. Translate into English paying attention to the expression of the subject.

1. Очень важно поставить их в известность сейчас же.
2. Здесь так темно, включите свет, пожалуйста.
3. Лететь на самолете над горами в хорошую погоду — огромное удовольствие.
4. Пора начинать.
5. Не отставать от моды — вот все, к чему она стремилась.
6. В их предложении есть смысл.
7. Этого будет достаточно.
8. Кто же будет победителем?
9. Трудно в это поверить!
10. Четырежды четыре — шестнадцать.
11. Смотреть в бинокль на взлетающие самолеты было для Фреда большим развлечением.
12. Что это за люди?
13. «Нет» в его взгляде выражалось настолько ясно, что мы не стали повторять свою просьбу.
14. Курение — враг здоровья.
15. Говорят, что в тех лесах есть медведи.
16. Запуск каждого нового спутника Земли — событие мирового значения.
17. В его взгляде была надежда.
18. Ходьба на лыжах принесет вам гораздо больше пользы, чем эти лекарства.
19. Управлять моим семейством не так-то легко!
20. Снова гремит гром. Сейчас начнется дождь, поспешим.
21. Смотри, кто-то машет нам рукой с платформы. Это Сережа?
22. Ее не было видно среди гостей.
23. Ваши сомнения для меня непонятны.

24. Никогда не знаешь, что принесет тебе завтрашний день. 25. Чтобы дружить с людьми, нужно прежде всего их уважать. 26. Что еще я могу сделать для вас? 27. Именно он мне сейчас нужен. 28. Имеются ли возражения? 29. Бесполезно чинить ваши часы, лучше купить новые. 30. Это Тоня придумала, а вовсе не Николай Иванович. 31. Разгрузка началась.

Predicate

Exercise 1. Point out the predicate in each of the following sentences and state its type. Translate into Russian.

a) 1. He excused himself and went outside. 2. There came a surprise. 3. He wondered what she was thinking. 4. No questions were asked about his absence. 5. On steam tables the day's dinner menu dishes were being portioned and served for delivery to dining-rooms. 6. I shouldn't have allowed that to happen, believe me, my dear Eliot, if I had been there. 7. At dawn fighting broke out with renewed violence.

b) 1. But I must be going now. 2. "Why should we go down to dessert twice a day?" said Venice. 3. You will have to do as you were told. 4. Most of our senior officers will have arrived by then. 5. Your mother must have gone through a good deal of suffering. 6. They may have telephone communication. 7. Who could have done such a thing? 8. Jack ought to have stayed for tea with them.

c) 1. The man grinned from ear to ear and began to play a lively tune. 2. I kept walking, busy with my thoughts. 3. Aloysius Royce continued to work quietly as the other two talked. 4. He burst out laughing. 5. They ceased to speak eyeing the newcomer suspiciously. 6. He would go there every afternoon just for pleasure. 7. You remind me of someone I used to know from Africa. 8. She stopped to talk to the Cypriot tailor. 9. The tanks began moving towards the bridge.

d) 1. Let the medical officer know, with my compliments, that I wish to see him. 2. I longed to go where there was life and movement. 3. The party director replied patiently, "I'd still prefer to come to your house." 4. We decided to tele-

phone the office at once. 5. She had utterly refused to do what they had asked her to. 6. Why did they refuse to come?

e) 1. The roof of the cottage was high and pointed. 2. The argument grew hot. 3. You men, you're all alike! 4. The plan is original but very difficult to be realized. 5. They remained silent for a while. 6. Why have you become so absent-minded, my dear fellow? 7. It is getting dark, will you turn on the light? 8. Her voice sounded very strange. 9. Something has gone wrong with the starter. 10. Mary's cakes taste always delicious.

f) 1. Mr Dempster waited until the conversation died. 2. For a full three minutes Daisy's mouth continued to laugh. 3. They were trying to calm her. 4. His parents had naturally desired to see her once at least before he carried her off to a distant settlement. 5. He couldn't go on living there alone. 6. I beg your pardon, but Mr Gatsby would like to speak to you alone. 7. She kept eyeing Henry with interest. 8. Aunt Juley tried to say something pleasant. 9. "Oh, by the way, I'm leaving for Europe tonight," he informed her. 10. I dared not utter a word. 11. She didn't really want to wake them. 12. The plane is to take off in a matter of minutes.

Exercise 2. Fill in the blanks with suitable post-positions.

1. He came ... to the banisters. 2. The noises of the city gradually died ... 3. The flowers in the vase gave ... a sweet smell. 4. Has Pete put ... this idea? 5. Can you show me ... to the head-master? 6. Those children have been brought ... excellently. 7. The patient sat ... in his bed to take the medicine. 8. Isn't it about time we got ... to business? 9. The inscription has worn ... 10. Are they going to give our plans ...? 11. The train pulled ... slowly. 12. Speak ..., we are listening to you. 13. Are you getting ... next stop? 14. The brass band struck ... a military tune.

Exercise 3. Consider the following sentences with the verbs *be* and *have*. Change constructions with *be* into constructions with *have* and vice versa. Give different versions of the change. Translate into Russian.

1. We have an amateur theatrical society in our club. 2. Their customs are very strange. 3. The author has a great talent. 4. The overcoat had many buttons on it. 5. The slippers

were high-heeled. 6. Those birds had long wings. 7. The girl had charming tiny freckles on her nose. 8. There was an imposing ink-stand on the director's desk. 9. The box had no label on. 10. The books were paper-backed. 11. The fish had golden fins. 12. The driver had no skill.

Exercise 4. Translate into English using constructions with *be* and *have*.

1. У нас было много общих интересов. 2. У этого человека странные глаза, правда? 3. Универмаг имеет большой выбор женской и мужской одежды на все сезоны. 4. Имя этого ученого широко известно. 5. В комнате было четыре окна. 6. В стакане лимонад? 7. У моих часов нет секундной стрелки. 8. У меня нет с собой ни пенни. 9. Неужели этот случай безнадежен? 10. Эта гора имеет слишком крутые склоны, она не подходит для тренировки. 11. Он — человек со способностями. 12. Из всех видов искусства кино имеет наиболее важное значение.

Exercise 5. Consider the predicates in the following sentences. Distinguish between the auxiliary, linking and full notional status of their finite verbs. Translate into Russian.

1. You are absolutely wrong. 2. They are in the library now. 3. When the famous actress appeared on the stage she was met with a tumultuous applause. 4. The man appeared outwardly calm. 5. She is getting restless. 6. Very soon he will be getting promotion. 7. The remark sounded rude. 8. The doctor sounded the patient carefully. 9. The old sailor grew red in the face. 10. The vegetables grow very well on this rich soil. 11. All this will turn up trumps in the end. 12. The car turned the corner and stopped.

Exercise 6. Point out the predicative in the following sentences and state what it is expressed by. Translate into Russian.

1. He looked young, erect, and well. 2. "The young man," said the general, "seemed a decent fellow, I thought." 3. It was he who persuaded them to meet us at the station. 4. The chief was a friend of Christie's and she knew that she was one of his favourites. 5. His first instinct was to pass on without a word, but Lawson did not give him the opportunity. 6. The best thing is doing it at once. 7. Pearson sounded

relieved. 8. My greatest wish in the world is that you should be happy. 9. He could not believe the child was only six, for his voice had the power of an eleven-year-old's. 10. Suddenly he felt afraid.

Exercise 7. Fill in the blanks with the proper link-verbs choosing them from the list below.

to be, to become, to get, to turn, to grow, to prove, to remain, to keep, to fall, to go, to look, to seem, to appear, to blush, to taste, to smell, to sound, to feel

1. It has been said that Mr Jonas ... pale when the behaviour of the old clerk attracted general attention. 2. "I'll do it," I resolved, and having framed this determination, I ... calm, and ... asleep. 3. He did not ... so bad that he could not go on working. 4. He ... scarlet as he thought of her laughing up her sleeve. 5. The face ... familiar to me, but I don't know the man. 6. It ... very good with mineral water. 7. Inside the floating cloak he ... tall, thin, and bony; and his hair ... red beneath the black cap. 8. He was taken aback and ... silent. 9. Pearson ... uncomfortable in that chair. 10. She knew she ... good tonight; she had dressed well and made up carefully. 11. Oh, Ashley, don't talk like that. You ... so sad. 12. The stable ... dry and pleasant in the rain.

Exercise 8. Use the adjective or adverb given in brackets.

1. She could turn her head (slow, slowly). 2. The air smelled (sweet, sweetly), larks sang. 3. Alex's eyes flashed (angry, angrily). 4. Nicola looked (quick, quickly) at Lawrie. But Lawrie, to her relieved surprise, was looking (high, highly) entertained. 5. Somehow she felt (hopeful, hopefully). 6. Maurice flashed a smile at Ralph who slid (easy, easily) into the water. 7. She sounded so (furious, furiously) that Rowan looked quite startled. 8. His face fell, and in bitter disappointment he sank (heavy, heavily) into a chair. 9. He looked (happy, happily) at the line of fires, with people grouped about them, and the colour of the flames against the night. 10. The phrase sounded (strange, strangely), I was mystified. 11. He walked round (slow, slowly). He felt (hot, hotly), and the rain did him good. 12. Tom Lewis appeared (quiet, quietly) beside Alan. 13. She turned the handle, and the door came (open,

openly). 14. Conversation did not go very (easy, easily), for she did not seem to have much to say. 15. Alex went (cold, coldly). 16. The clouds hung (heavy, heavily), and there was a rawness in the air that suggested snow.

Exercise 9. Translate into English using constructions with compound nominal predicates.

1. Она выбрала стул с прямой спинкой, и он оказался удобнее других. 2. В конце выступления его голос звучал странно. 3. Она оказалась на несколько лет моложе меня. 4. Тишина стала гнетущей. 5. Яблоки были не совсем спелые, но приятные на вкус. 6. Он старался казаться бодрым и оживленным, но чувствовал себя совсем больным. 7. Софья оставалась молчаливой весь вечер. 8. Заброшенный колодец совсем высох. 9. Дверь распахнулась, и на пороге появился Майкл. 10. Сегодня вы выглядите на десять лет моложе, чем обычно. 11. Сохраняйте спокойствие, господа, ничего особенного не случилось. 12. Ткань была мягкой и шелковистой на ощупь. 13. Становится сыро, пора возвращаться домой. 14. Мелодия показалась ему знакомой, но он не мог припомнить, когда и где он ее слышал.

Exercise 10. Consider the phrase-verb predicate in the following sentences. Translate into Russian.

1. Tom gave him a startled look and went scarlet. 2. Miranda stole a quick glance at Miss Cromwell. 3. Luke took hold of the desk and shook himself. 4. Spencer took a deep breath. 5. She heaved a great sigh of relief. 6. Suddenly Doctor South shot a question at Jane. 7. You shouldn't worry, Mrs Wilkinson, these young people will take care of themselves. 8. Did she really take no notice of the signs Bob was making to her? 9. He took leave of the company rather unexpectedly. 10. They are going to pay us a return visit next Sunday. 11. The man gave a deep sigh and stood up to leave. 12. He caught sight of Mr Robinson walking in through the open gate.

Exercise 11. Translate into English using constructions with a phrase-verb predicate.

1. Она взглянула на нее из-под ресниц. 2. Он повернул за угол, и я потеряла его из виду. 3. Ребенок просту-

дился, его нужно немедленно уложить в постель. 4. Он вздрогнул, когда мы вошли. 5. Король громко рассмеялся, и послы вежливо заулыбались. 6. Я его встретил, когда совершал прогулку. 7. Я не удивился, когда, не взглянув на меня, он прошел в другую сторону комнаты и начал разговаривать с гостями. 8. Она была так занята своими мыслями, что не заметила мужчину в белом макинтоше. 9. Теперь, я думаю, можно закурить. 10. К сожалению, я должна оставить ваше приятное общество. 11. Присмотрись за ребенком, пока я не вернусь. 12. Событие, о котором я собираюсь вам рассказать, произошло двадцать пять лет назад.

Exercise 12. Expand the predicates of the following sentences by aspective and modal verbs. Make the necessary changes and additions to justify the expansions.

1. All of them understood the purpose of the task. 2. It rains or it snows. 3. Nora hesitated. 4. He was aware of somebody's presence. 5. The plan will be fulfilled ahead of time. 6. The pictures are marvellous. 7. The tea-party is a success. 8. Very soon Father will return from work. 9. The car moved faster. 10. We saw behind his schemes. 11. The performance was over. 12. The air-liner arrives in half an hour.

Exercise 13. Translate into English using compound aspective and modal predicate.

1. Необходимо продолжать попытки наладить с ними прямую радиосвязь. 2. Сергей, должно быть, знает этот вопрос лучше, чем я. 3. Он начал колебаться в своем выборе. 4. Нам следует внимательно продумать организацию занятий. 5. Я бы на вашем месте перестал волноваться. 6. Соглашайтесь, пока не поздно; они могут передумать. 7. Позвоните ему, если вам нужно срочно с ним посоветоваться; в это время он может не быть занят. 8. Известие может показаться довольно странным. 9. Нам приходится быть готовыми ко всему. 10. Мне это стало нравиться. 11. В молодости он ведь был хорошим оратором. 12. Поэтому можешь ты не быть, но гражданином быть обязан!

Exercise 14. Consider the double predicate in the following sentences. Translate into Russian.

1. The day broke grey and dull. 2. The dust lay thick on the country road. 3. The door slammed shut behind the newcomers. 4. The morning of the Handicap dawned clear and bright. 5. The moon rose red over the silent valley. 6. But Alex, when he was alone, sat silent, thoughtful. 7. If by any chance one of the servants heard her she could say that she had awakened hungry and had gone down to see if she could find something to eat. 8. He was lying flat on his back looking up into the eternal blue of the sky. 9. That night, Martha lay awake with her mind in turmoil. 10. He came home pale and puzzled, and called his wife into his study.

Exercise 15. Translate into English using constructions with a double predicate.

1. Солнце восходило яркое над снежной равниной. 2. Борис вбежал в комнату возбужденный, и мы притихли, ожидая новостей. 3. Человек стоял неподвижно на пристани, вглядываясь в морскую даль. 4. Старик сидел в своем кресле прямой и молчаливый. 5. Ребята смеялись, счастливые. 6. Их сын вернулся из экспедиции взрослым мужчиной. 7. Дым над лесом поднимался черный и тяжелый. 8. Они смотрели на эту сцену глубоко потрясенные. 9. Сосна на холме стояла высокая и одинокая. 10. Дети пришли промокшие до нитки.

Exercise 16. Use the proper form of the verb in brackets paying attention to its grammatical agreement with the subject.

a) 1. Nobody (to pick) his parents. 2. There (to be) something in his eye that (to be) unusual. 3. If there (to be) anything you need, give me a call. 4. Each and every one of you (to be) good. 5. There (to be) a lot of children about and a good many babies in the park. 6. At the top of the stairs he hesitated between four doors. Which of them (to be) Timothy's? 7. "(to be) you crazy, or (to be) I?" — "Neither of us (to be), I trust." 8. Presently all (to be) quiet again. 9. I warned Val that neither of them (to be) to be spoken to about old matters.

b) 1. Neither of the examples (to be) good. 2. Either you or John (to have) broken this cup. 3. It (to be) I who (to be) on duty today. 4. I (to be) afraid it (to be) you, Tom, who (to be) in the way. 5. Three and a half dollars a day (to be) not a lot of money. 6. Either of the books (to be) interesting. 7. There (to be) lots of history and biography. 8. There (to be) a lot in what you say. 9. There (to be) a lot of good books in our library. 10. There (to be) plenty we can do. 11. There (to be) a dozen people there. 12. A group of men (to be) standing on the sidewalk.

c) 1. The police, of course, (to be) helpless. 2. It (to be) a pity, Freemantle thought, that the remainder of the crowd, who (to be) waiting downstairs, could not have heard him up here. 3. The government (to have) got their eye on him. 4. His audience (to be) getting impatient. 5. The Berksfeld family (to be) perpetually short of money. 6. Most of the senior Barford staff (to be) already there. 7. In a quiet bystreet a German band of five players in faded uniforms and with battered brass instruments (to be) playing to an audience of street arabs and leisurely messenger boys. 8. Their party (to be) divided into several groups, each accompanied by two men.

d) 1. His eyes (to be) large and blue, but the blue (to be) very pale, and they looked rather tired already. 2. The French (to see) these things differently from us. 3. How foolish the old (to be), thinking they could tell what the young felt. 4. Some of the wounded (to be) noisy, but most (to be) quiet. 5. Everybody (to know) that the poor (to be) splendid to one another. 6. Now and again, the quiet (to be) broken by the crack-cracking of musket fire in the last line of defences. 7. Every elector thinks his own good (to be) the good of the country.

Exercise 17. Translate into English paying attention to the rendering of the predicate.

1. У вашего велосипеда слишком высокое седло. 2. Новости были ободряющими. 3. Больной начинает чувствовать себя лучше. 4. Народ на площади ожидал появления главы государства. 5. Некоторые правила могут показаться трудными для запоминания. 6. Роман оказался совсем не скучным. 7. Он не будет против нашего предложения.

8. Не думаю, что им будет трудно привыкнуть к новым порядкам. 9. Не пора ли приступить к испытанию двигателя? 10. Консультации, если я не ошибаюсь, должны были начаться в девять часов утра. 11. Ребята продолжали играть как ни в чем не бывало. 12. Саша вышел из кабинета директора бледный и взволнованный. 13. Где моя трость и шляпа? 14. Молодая пара не обращала внимания на то, что происходило вокруг. 15. Весь персонал должен был собраться в актовом зале. 16. Вся их семья — художники и архитекторы. 17. Ваши известия — новая надежда для меня. 18. Эти духи удивительно приятно пахнут. 19. Он почувствовал, что начинает сходить с ума. 20. Она бросила на него взгляд, полный любви и нежности. 21. Вы должны перестать разговаривать друг с другом, когда к вам обращается старший.

Object

Exercise 1. Consider different types of objects (direct, indirect, prepositional). Comment on the general semantic relations they express. Translate into Russian.

1. A red salvage truck engaged gear and roared away. 2. The doorway was occupied by a bulky man with a brown attaché case. 3. His mother held out his jacket for him. 4. Why are you afraid of diving? 5. We must keep the telephone line open to the office. 6. Spencer put out a hand to steady himself. 7. He had been thankful for the chance to sleep. 8. The clerk nodded approval. 9. Remind the newspaper office to cover the possible evacuation of houses. 10. He couldn't think of a thing to say. 11. We shall depend only on you in this matter, shan't we? 12. No worry, sir, the doctor will be attending to her presently. 13. The inspector allowed himself a smile. 14. Do you want to have the printed records at once? 15. I'm sorry to have disturbed you. 16. Clearly she hasn't thought of the possibility. 17. To go such a long way on foot — impossible! 18. The family were busy packing for the trip. 19. We may offer to you three more of the same. 20. He shook himself out another cigarette. 21. This slender girl will make an excellent teacher.

Exercise 2. Complete the sentences using the given pairs of words and phrases as objects. After that permute the objects if possible. Then replace them with pronouns-substitutes changing the word order where necessary and introducing the required prepositions.

Model: I promised: a new bike, Jimmy. → I promised Jimmy a new bike. → I promised a new bike to Jimmy. → I promised it to him.

1. The shift master has explained: the worker, the procedure. 2. We offered: all the necessary assistance, the delegation. 3. The consulting specialist suggested: the management, a different approach to the problem. 4. This time I'll excuse: little Pete, his misbehaviour. 5. The employers sometimes deny: the elementary rights, the workers. 6. Can we do: what else, Mr and Mrs Smith? 7. Mr Prokhorov himself will tell: the whole story, the Chief Justice. 8. The collision caused: a fatal leak, the tanker. 9. I want to ask: another question, the office representative. 10. She meant to do: a favour, the newly married couple. 11. James hurried to fetch: a bottle of sherry, the company. 12. The advice has saved: the publishers, much spending. 13. The aides will make: the Commander-in-Chief, a summary report.

Exercise 3. Choose suitable verbs with prepositions out of the given list to complete the following sentences. Justify your choice. Make possible additions to the fillers relying on your own resources.

ask about, for; appeal to; appear to; believe in; belong to; care about, for; choose between; complain of, about; congratulate on; count on, with; consist of, in; depend on; differ from; do for; dream of, about; expect from, of; happen to; hear of, about, from; let into, out of; look at, after, for, into; make for, of, from; rely on; sit by, over, down to; speak to, about; succeed in; suffer from, for; supply to, with; talk of, about, with; think of, about

1. You must ... the advice of your seniors. 2. What are you ... so carefully? 3. All of us should ... this great man. 4. Is your friend ... a severe cold? 5. That kind of music ... me. 6. The novel ... many chapters. 7. Shall I ... the matter? 8. My pupils ... me. 9. This cloth ... the samples in the show-case. 10. Whom is Mary ... so excitedly? 11. There is little more

to ... the man. 12. The procedure ... changing the sentence into a phrase. 13. It ... me that tomorrow it will be fine. 14. May I ... another sheet of paper? 15. Mike has been ... his report for nearly a week. 16. Will you ... me? 17. You may always ... my help. 18. There are only three possibilities to 19. I don't think they will ... in this work. 20. What are you ... ? 21. My wife and I don't ... travelling. 22. Let me ... your birthday! 23. I have never ... this author. 24. Why should we ... his judgement? 25. Why not ... the dog ... the room?

Exercise 4. Consider the nouns, gerunds and infinitives used as objects to adjectives in the following sentences. Translate into Russian.

1. We were aware of strange activity going on around us. 2. The new method is worthy of the closest consideration. 3. The letter had no signature, and the handwriting was quite strange to Nellie. 4. She was invariably patient with her pupils, even with the most backward of them. 5. Why is he afraid to take the responsibility upon himself? 6. Persuading is always preferable to compelling. 7. The young inspector was proud of having resolved the mystery upon so little evidence. 8. A sleeping pill would be very useful to her now. 9. His pictures are not only true to life, their chief merit lies in their concentration on the typical. 10. The chief is much pleased with your report, only he doesn't want to show it. 11. Aren't they tired of listening to his endless complaints? 12. I am so glad to be of service to you? 13. She is certainly fond of art in all its manifestations. 14. At last the river is free from ice, so we may get the motor boat ready for launching.

Exercise 5. Translate into English paying attention to the use of prepositions with objects both to verbs and adjectives.

1. Окончательное решение вопроса зависит от администрации. 2. Почему вы боитесь встречаться с этим человеком? 3. Я устал слушать обещания, которые вы не выполняете! 4. Постарайтесь сосредоточиться на содержании задания. 5. Лицо женщины на фотографии было мне совершенно незнакомо. 6. Неужели Кристина не любит стихов? 7. Мы очень благодарны вам за переданную информацию. 8. Эту пьесу стоит посмотреть. 9. Пусть они вникнут в дело

поглубже. 10. Разве ты не видишь — они сами огорчены, что не могут помочь нам? 11. Портрет действительно соответствует оригиналу. 12. Почему они удивлены нашим предложением? 13. Вы закончили курс обучения и теперь способны решать такие вопросы сами. 14. Такая завязка типична для художественного метода романиста. 15. Эта улица идет параллельно Кутузовскому проспекту. 16. С чем же мне их поздравлять? 17. Для вас будет полезно познакомиться с проектом заранее. 18. Еще несколько девушек включились в беседу. 19. Советую вам всегда считаться с советами этого мудрого человека. 20. Наша страна богата природными ресурсами, но главное ее богатство — прекрасные люди. 21. Все были заняты подготовкой к уборочной кампании. 22. А я все мечтаю о встрече с Таней.

Exercise 6. Replace the verb by a verb-noun combination with *have, give, take* expressing a concrete action or an action as a fact.

Model: Mary is talking with her friend on a garden bench. → Mary is having a talk with her friend on a garden bench.

1. See, Caroline is leaving already. 2. Suddenly his horse jumped up. 3. Will you sit in front, or will you prefer to stay behind? 4. The woman responded by shrugging her shoulders. 5. Go and wash yourself immediately! 6. The goal-keeper kicked the ball sending it to the centre of the field. 7. The patient spent the night badly. 8. Will you look into my notes? 9. Why didn't she answer our question? 10. William, step forward! 11. I'd like to walk a little before my dinner. 12. Boys, why put it off? Let's swim in the lake now. 13. You have missed your target. Shoot again. 14. I don't want him to feel offended. 15. On hearing her name pronounced by a stranger, Miss Russel started. 16. Don't you think that the designers should be encouraged?

Exercise 7. Consider constructions with cognate objects. Translate into Russian. Replace the cognate-object combinations with single verbs, making other changes in the sentences if necessary.

1. The old couple have lived a long and happy life. 2. King Alfred the Great fought many battles with the invaders before giving himself up to literature and education. 3. Let's

play a game of chess, we've got still time before the session. 4. The hostess smiled a welcoming smile to the entering guest. 5. What fine tales the grandmother is telling to her grandchildren! 6. You must sleep a sound sleep, and your headache will cease without taking medicine. 7. If you've got a question, ask it! 8. Will Jenny sing a song? 9. The commander fired three shots in the air. 10. See, she will dance now some folk dances, it will be an excellent performance. 11. The writer was fond of going lonely walks in the fields. 12. You may laugh your laugh, only don't do it so loudly, mind the sleeping children! 13. I dreamed such a strange dream last night! It was like living through it, not just seeing a vision. 14. Micky is at his usual occupation: running a race with Jerry round the big flower-bed.

Exercise 8. Consider constructions with the pronoun *it* as an absolute and anticipatory formal object introducing infinitive and gerundial object-phrases. Translate into Russian.

1. Do you find it easy arguing with them? 2. I consider it impossible to change the plan now that the work is underway. 3. Let's walk it a little; we may take a bus farther on. 4. I don't think it advisable to turn the task over to another working team. 5. Are they going to rough it all night through in the mountains? 6. They made it very difficult exchanging ideas on the matter as we understand it. 7. Fancy him running it the whole way to the station to catch the last train to town! 8. Let's leave it to the qualification commission to decide which of them is eligible. 9. So, Tracy is bossing it here again! 10. We'll be hiking it together a whole week — nothing could be finer, really! 11. The doctor thinks it highly desirable to hold a consultation on the case. 12. You'll find it dream-like to admire the sight of the setting sun from the hill.

Exercise 9. Translate into English paying attention to the use of constructions with objects of all kinds.

1. Вас будут учить всему, что должен знать квалифицированный преподаватель-лингвист. 2. Но на мой вопрос мне не ответили. 3. Ну как, пройдемся немного пешком? 4. Не спорьте с ней, ведь у нее профессиональное знание предмета. 5. В чем состоит их предложение? 6. Мне хо-

чется занять место у левого борта. 7. Разрешите взглянуть на вашу газету, если вы ее прочли. 8. Не боитесь проиграть партию? 9. Они были заняты проверкой двигателя перед стартом. 10. Я очень рад, что сумел дать вам хороший совет. 11. Закончила она, наконец, свои тренировки? 12. Положитесь на него, он вас не подведет. 13. Этому человеку есть чем гордиться: он прожил жизнь борца за правду. 14. Опять она здесь хозяйничает! 15. Штурман сосредоточенно следил за показаниями приборов. 16. Вы удовлетворены принятым решением? 17. Некоторые детали нужно заменить новыми. 18. Пора приниматься за работу! 19. Кто будет оперировать больного? 20. Давайте искупаясь, этот автобус довезет нас до самого пляжа. 21. С этим решением придется примириться. 22. Попроси тетю Полю присмотреть за детьми. 23. Кто распорядился отложить собрание? 24. Он почувствовал, что за ним кто-то следит. 25. Если работа слишком трудна для вас, можете передать ее кому-нибудь другому. 26. Не лучше ли будет обменять билет на послезавтра? 27. Ударьте хорошенько по мячу!

Attribute. Apposition

Exercise 1. Point out the attributes and appositions, state their kinds, explain the semantic relations expressed by them. Translate into Russian.

1. On the third day there was sudden excitement down at the bend. 2. The landscape class, with stools and easels and sketch-boxes, tramped off twice a week to some vantage point to indulge in plein-air painting. 3. Those were golden days in my life; it was more than twenty years ago. 4. The evening beauty of the river with a soft mist rising from its glassy surface stirred her out of her state of suspended animation. 5. Their next season's crop was threatened too, for the pumping plant could not operate. 6. Beyond the half-drawn curtains at the French windows the summer sun beat down upon the green lawn. 7. A gaunt woman in a black dress, long apron and sun-bonnet came out, and rather grudgingly filled her can with three-penn'orth of milk. 8. Oh, that never-to-be-forgotten summer in the Golden Valley! 9. The only piece

of furniture worthy of note was a large grandfather chair standing in front of the fireplace. 10. We have many questions to discuss before we part, my friends. 11. A few more objections of the same sort were raised, but all of them were overruled as irrelevant. 12. All the people present were deeply shocked by the nature of the crime the defendant was charged with. 13. Everything imaginable had been done for the capture of the fugitives, but with no avail. 14. Samuel Chealy, the then President of the firm, was definitely against the dubious deal. 15. Is there any purpose in trying to by-pass these problems? 16. The final decision, in accord with the unshakable law of the family, rested with Aunt Agatha. 17. I doubt whether Major Bell will approve of the plan, so casually outlined. 18. The letter from the Carstaire Publishers lay unsealed on the desk. 19. The second plane, a huge Boeing, was about to touch the concrete runway brightly lit by spotlights. 20. I'm afraid there is nothing to safely rely on in his account of the case.

Exercise 2. Change the following sentences into the corresponding noun-phrases with attributes.

- Model:* 1. The answer was prepared. → A prepared answer.
 2. The water is for drinking. → Drinking water.
 3. The room had a low ceiling. → A room with a low ceiling.

1. The day was rainy. 2. The remark is very clever. 3. Her heart was kind. 4. The bowl is for sugar. 5. The mountains were covered with snow. 6. The noises were muffled. 7. The catch is abundant. 8. The desk is for writing. 9. The room is for reception. 10. The train was approaching. 11. The coat was made of wool. 12. The country house is in good taste. 13. The place is for hiding. 14. The girl was like a butterfly. 15. His nose resembled a button. 16. The problem had a difficulty. 17. The man was in trouble. 18. The school is for flying. 19. The machine is for calculating. 20. The planning is efficient. 21. The Pedagogical Institute is in Moscow. 22. The novel is of adventure. 23. The story is gripping. 24. The birds are singing. 25. The trees rustled. 26. The woman smiled. 27. The waves were thundering. 28. The snow was falling. 29. The doctor arrived. 30. The scholar has a famous name.

Exercise 3. Translate into English paying attention to the typical structure of noun-phrases with attributes.

1. Женщина с ребенком на руках. 2. Бессодержательный роман. 3. Варенье из клубники. 4. Картина Репина. 5. Элегантно сшитый костюм. 6. Свежевыкрашенный забор. 7. Пьеса, поставленная известным режиссером. 8. Всем знакомая мелодия. 9. Цветы, собранные девушкой. 10. Переработанное издание книги. 11. Солнце, садящееся за лесом. 12. Городской пейзаж, написанный маслом. 13. Включенный двигатель. 14. Две чашки чая с лимоном. 15. Контрольная работа, проверенная учителем. 16. Заново перепечатанные страницы. 17. Бассейн с водой, искрящейся на солнце. 18. Приближающийся поезд. 19. Автомобиль, несущийся по ночному шоссе. 20. Девочка, похожая на птичку. 21. Письмо, оставленное без ответа. 22. Свежезамороженные овощи. 23. Бутылки с яркими наклейками. 24. Домик в четыре окна. 25. Приключенческая повесть. 26. Только что починенный транзистор. 27. Оплаченная покупка. 28. Посылка, полученная на почте. 29. Заказанные места в партере. 30. Тонко нарезанный сыр. 31. Мазок масляной краской. 32. Путник, застигнутый бурей. 33. Блюде с золотым ободком. 34. Туфли на высоких каблуках. 35. Дом с покатою крышей. 36. Дымящаяся сигара. 37. Взлетающий самолет. 38. Нежные звуки скрипки. 39. Неумолимый приход зимы. 40. Построение демократического общества. 41. Дирижер большого симфонического оркестра. 42. Выборы президента. 43. Высокие договаривающиеся стороны. 44. Зависимость от погодных условий. 45. Приземление на вторую полосу. 46. Выборы до установленного срока. 47. Борьба с вредителями полей. 48. Падение цен на бирже.

Exercise 4. Consider the pairs of noun-phrases with attributes. Explain the difference in meaning between the members of each pair minding the difference in their accentuation (one stress against two stresses respectively). Translate into Russian.

1. A dancing girl — a dancing hall. 2. A catching tune — a catching net. 3. Boiling water — a boiling kettle. 4. A flying bird — flying weather. 5. A calculating mind — a calculating machine. 6. A waiting patient — a waiting

room. 7. A climbing plant — a climbing rocket. 8. A boxing match — a boxing glove. 9. Racing sportsmen — racing tracks. 10. A mixing device — mixing substances. 11. A drinking horse — drinking water. 12. A smoking chimney — a smoking carriage. 13. A swimming dolphin — a swimming pool. 14. A walking man — a walking stick. 15. A bathing girl — a bathing suit. 16. An examining look — an examining machine. 17. Skating children — skating shoes. 18. Skiing sportsmen — skiing sticks. 19. A working man — a working day. 20. A painting artist — painting mastery. 21. A running dog — running water. 22. A sleeping child — a sleeping powder.

Exercise 5. Change the prepositional and clause attributes into the corresponding non-prepositional attributes. Translate into Russian.

Model: 1. The region of acute earthquake. → An acute earthquake region. 2. The limit imposed on time. → A time limit.

1. The cutting machine tool of high precision. 2. The missile of long range. 3. The flight with no stops. 4. The motor with eight cylinders. 5. The building having twenty-eight storeys. 6. The car with two seats. 7. The lorry carrying a load of twenty-four tons. 8. The warship with sixty cannons. 9. The plane for low flights. 10. The car capable of moving with a high speed. 11. The turbine of high power. 12. The airliner having four engines. 13. The fire effected by rockets. 14. The attack made by cavalry. 15. The lipstick having a soft colour. 16. The clothes that are worn in summer. 17. The battery of liquid crystals. 18. The games which are played out of doors. 19. The characters of the film.

Exercise 6. Translate into English paying attention to the types of attributive connection of words.

1. Прибор высокой точности. 2. Счетная машина. 3. Беспосадочные полеты. 4. Школа плавания. 5. Двухмоторный самолет. 6. Скоростной автомобиль. 7. Армейский патруль. 8. Доставка тяжелых грузов. 9. Шестнадцатэтажный дом. 10. Нож для нарезания сыра. 11. Легко запоминающаяся песня. 12. Давно забытая мелодия.

13. Чайник для кипячения. 14. Пушечное ядро. 15. Пятидолларовая банкнота. 16. Артиллерийский огонь. 17. Соображения безопасности. 18. Рабочая неделя. 19. Горные лыжи. 20. Переговоры о перемирии. 21. Пожарная команда. 22. Морское путешествие. 23. Счетная комиссия. 24. Экзаменационная комиссия. 25. Склон горы. 26. Транзисторный приемник. 27. Актеры кино. 28. Четырехколесный экипаж. 29. Начальник станции. 30. Инспекционная группа.

Exercise 7. Explain the semantic relations expressed by the appositions of various kinds in the following phrases.

1. Colonel Pollard. 2. Inspector Craddock, of Scotland Yard. 3. William the Conqueror. 4. Edward the Confessor. 5. Peter the Great. 6. John the Baptist. 7. The River Mississippi. 8. The Black Sea. 9. The hotel "Majestic". 10. The City of London. 11. The village of Otradnoye. 12. Gorky Street. 13. Piccadilly Circus. 14. The newspaper "Morning Star". 15. The ship "Queen Mary". 16. Byron, the great English poet. 17. The Rocky Mountains. 18. Mount Elbrus. 19. Miss Tilda, the Head Waitress. 20. Stewardess Jane. 21. Lake Ontario. 22. Regent Street. 23. The Anderson brothers. 24. Mr Smith, Editor-in-Chief, "Journal of Forestry". 25. Ronald F. Carster, a mining engineer. 26. The Moskva River.

Exercise 8. Translate into English paying attention to the structure and meaning of various noun-phrases with attributes.

1. Михаил окончил летную школу под Иркутском. 2. Необычайная красота тех мест поразила нас. 3. Посетители выставки любовались полотнами Айвазовского. 4. Женщина в красном была королевой бала. 5. Боюсь, что эта романтическая история выдумана им самим. 6. Как можно есть такое недожаренное мясо! 7. Ученикам было трудно делать упражнение, содержащее много незнакомых слов. 8. В комнату вошла девушка с конной золотистых волос. 9. Окончательный текст договора включал поправки, внесенные обеими сторонами. 10. Обращение с этим прибором требует специальных знаний и большой осторожности. 11. Наша ферма славится своими особыми сортами душистых дынь. 12. Все были очарованы изумительной

игрой талантливой актрисы. 13. Замена изношенного двигателя оказалась делом получаса. 14. Неожиданное препятствие было устранено общими усилиями. 15. Обещанная гроза так и не пришла. 16. Ракетный автомобиль становится осязаемой реальностью. 17. Плавание с аквалангом — увлекательный вид спорта. 18. Боря, ты можешь выкрутить из люстры перегоревшую лампу? 19. Разве теперь выпускают трехколесные велосипеды для взрослых? 20. Высокий торшер с зеленым абажуром разливал по комнате мягкий свет. 21. Межпланетные полеты космических кораблей, управляемых людьми, захватили воображение ученых и изобретателей. 22. Город, освобожденный от врагов, начинал новую жизнь. 23. Мы хотим снять домик на солнечной стороне холма. 24. Текущий прогноз погоды обещает конец недели без дождя. 25. Вы никогда не ехали на сани по замерзшей реке? 26. Познакомьтесь: это г-н Филатов, главный инженер нашего отдела. 27. Караван в двести верблюдов медленно двигался на восток вдоль пересохшего русла. 28. Наши спортсмены одержали блестящие победы в состязаниях почти по всем видам спорта.

Adverbial Modifier

Exercise 1. Point out adverbial modifiers in the following sentences. State their types. Translate into Russian.

1. A secretary came running with a frightened expression. 2. Mary descended the slope very easily. 3. The people in the bus remained silent till the end of the ride. 4. In spite of their lively talk each of them had something in reserve. 5. Alfred returned presently with quite a creditable assortment of tools. 6. They were just passing in through a side door. 7. The lady lived in a large gloomy house in one of London's higher class squares. 8. The fire that was merrily burning in the grate attracted the newcomers as a magnet. 9. Bill was much too exhausted from his night vigil to be of any further help. 10. The room was empty save for a small boy playing with his toys in a corner. 11. But for sheer coincidence, you would hardly be likely to run across him in

this busy place. 12. Caroline, not knowing what to say, looked questioningly at her companion. 13. The village is large enough to organize a drama society for the young folk. 14. Despite his easy smile, the man was woefully difficult to deal with. 15. The woman cried out in spite of herself. 16. Whatever the circumstances, you must be confident of your just cause, my friends. 17. The motorcycle rushed past like a lightning leaving a cloud of smoke and a few stunned passers-by behind. 18. In case of any emergency, press the knob on your right.

Exercise 2. Expand the following simple sentences by choosing adverbial modifiers from the given lists. Supply as many versions of expansion for each sentence as you can. Think of your own adverbial expansions for the sentences.

Place: through the forest, by the open window, all over the world, high up in the sky, in the mountains, over there, down the hill, along the quay, up and down the lane, under the poplars. **Time:** until the end of the performance, on that memorable day, after the wedding party, in a moment, on arrival, from that time on, while in town, before long, last month, next year, in the past, in the future, only then. **Manner and comparison:** in a different way, laughing heartily, as if asking for permission, with a happy smile, in a friendly manner, unlike herself, as never before, as if in passing, unequivocally, as cautiously as possible, not so comfortable as expected, as though, as frightened by something, as clumsily as could be imagined, relying on one's own resources, abruptly, thoroughly. **Attendant circumstances:** unexpectedly, with a loud laugh, smoking a pipe, with an outstretched hand, without a greeting, chatting uninterruptedly, without noticing him, in desperate conditions, without any outside help, with all that noise going on around them, with his face turned to the east. **Condition:** in case of his refusal, if prepared beforehand, in the event of failure, if driven by circumstances, but for your help, in case of missing the train, given the necessary knowledge, without their permission, but for Captain Brown, but for the stormy sea, in case of emergency. **Concession:** in spite of their objections, for all his remonstrances, whatever the decision, even if so, even in case of their disagreement, no matter how late, notwithstanding the differences of opinion,

though temporarily, if but superficially, however clumsily, if no quite distinctly. Cause: with your excellent knowledge of people, for want of competent advice, because of her wish to get there, just because of that, in default of the document, remembering the note, submitting to her insistence, for that reason, having spent a sleepless night. Purpose: in order to demonstrate its use, to be freed from the obligation, so as not to show one's disappointment, in order to help them with their training, so as to give him a good example, to get there ahead of the others, in order to defend themselves, not to be mocked by the mob. Result: too tiresome to be entertaining, strong enough to be his rival, clever enough to understand their predicament, sufficient to make one cry, not comfortable enough to give us pleasure, too rude to be funny, not so lucky as to catch the morning train, too abstract to be convincing, too quarrelsome to inspire sympathy.

1. Tell them the whole story. 2. I would join in the conversation. 3. They will be back by the weekend. 4. I shall be with you. 5. You may do it. 6. She must consult an eye specialist. 7. The idea may seem original. 8. Mr Stone changed the subject. 9. There will be much fun. 10. We would have been drowned. 11. The picture was fixed on the wall. 12. The plane will take off. 13. The street is entirely reconstructed. 14. Ned will return, too. 15. She will be allowed to stay. 16. The answer was in the negative. 17. They would have accepted the invitation. 18. It makes no difference. 19. The teacher will be talking to us. 20. I'll need your advice. 21. The scene is set. 22. We heard voices. 23. Let him check the engine. 24. The letter was not sent. 25. Jacob told me so. 26. This style will become her. 27. Do as I ask you. 28. The lecture notes will be left unfinished. 29. John wouldn't know what to answer. 30. They strolled along the lane.

Exercise 3. Expand the following noun-phrases by adverbs of degree listed below.

very, perfectly, quite, fearly, astonishingly, awfully, rather, more or less, surprisingly, entirely, completely, greatly, hardly, intolerably, considerably, comparatively, sufficiently, absolutely

1. an easy excuse, 2. a lively talk, 3. a devoted friend, 4. shabby clothes, 5. a friendly smile, 6. a masterly stroke.

7. a tall poplar, 8. vast fields, 9. a plump woman, 10. an unperturbed expression, 11. a beaming face, 12. wise words, 13. good advice, 14. a strange behaviour, 15. a far-fetched excuse, 16. a mad idea, 17. an accurate calculation, 18. a catchy tune, 19. encouraging news, 20. powerful engines, 21. a lame explanation, 22. expert cooking, 23. abundant crops, 24. worn-out trousers, 25. a dull face, 26. an overcast sky, 27. stormy weather, 28. her neat handwriting, 29. our past pleasures, 30. an innocent smile, 31. an enthusiastic approval, 32. a voluntary act, 33. profound satisfaction, 34. an unruly child, 35. a fine fellow.

Exercise 4. Translate into English the adverbial modifiers arranged in the lists below and use them in sentences of your own.

Place: где-то вблизи, очень далеко отсюда, где мы никогда не бывали, на перекрестке, везде, через дорогу, по ту сторону площади, на четвертой полке снизу, откуда-то, за облаками, не доходя до озера, в самом углу, в Музее истории, на той же странице, через парадную дверь, в вагоне курьерского поезда, над головами собравшихся, среди снегов Антарктиды, в бурных водах океана.

Time: очень давно, позавчера, через две недели, с того самого вечера, сию секунду, никогда, до бесконечности, всегда, через неделю в это же время, в древности, никогда ранее, только тогда, по приходе, по прибытии к месту назначения, в этот миг, в течение всего года, каждые три дня, с самого начала, с тех самых пор.

Manner: громким голосом, по инструкции, хором, украдкой, нежно, привычным способом, как никогда, согласно вашим указаниям, как скрипка, совсем не так, подобно буре, с грохотом, устало, как будто примирившись с неизбежным, вне себя от счастья.

Comparison: как цветок, как будто нехотя, как на войне, как в самолете, как будто в приключенческом фильме, как будто по принуждению, как в темном лесу, как после тяжелого рабочего дня, как будто в пустыне, как будто нарочно; не так любезно, как прежде; удобнее, чем на поезде; словно во сне.

Attendant circumstances: широко раскрыв глаза, одновременно поправляя прическу, не поднимая глаз, переходя

улицу, стоя на ветру, держа оружие наготове, перебирая струны, с добродушной улыбкой, с изменившимся лицом, со слезами на глазах, не переставая разговаривать, широко расставив ноги, вздохнув, с книгой на коленях.

Condition: в случае опасности, при необходимости, если бы не эта встреча, при его помощи, в вашем присутствии, при таком условии, если бы не Надя, если так, допуская вашу заинтересованность, если бы не их вмешательство.

Concession: несмотря ни на что, вопреки их советам, хоть и издалека, пусть изредка, при всех его удачах, при всем том, тем не менее, пусть и нехотя, хотя и не совсем точно, несмотря на их возражения, вопреки предсказаниям, при всей вашей осмотрительности, волей-неволей, как бы то ни было.

Cause: из-за его упрямства, в силу обстоятельств, перед лицом опасности, понимая необходимость, подчиняясь уговорам товарищей, из уважения к вам, не имея при себе денег, вспомнив о свидании, помня это правило, с его сновкой, по этой причине, усвоив правила.

Purpose: чтобы не опоздать на самолет, для удовольствия, чтобы увидеть этого актера, для развития навыков речи, для быстрого разведения огня, чтобы погреться, чтобы не вызвать ее раздражения, чтобы помириться с ними, для нашего общего блага, для мира на земле.

Result: достаточно долго, чтобы утомиться; слишком хорошо, чтобы было правдой; слишком ветрено, чтобы выйти под парусом; именно такой, чтобы удовлетворить покупателя; достаточно, чтобы понять; чересчур громко, чтобы было приятно.

Exercise 5. Translate into English paying attention to adverbial modifiers of different types.

1. В ту же секунду прозвучал выстрел. 2. Вещи лежат вон в том углу, около этажерки. 3. В случае отказа обратитесь к заведующему. 4. Если не завтра, то встретимся в пятницу. 5. Докладчик замолчал совершенно неожиданно. 6. Приготовьте все приборы согласно инструкции. 7. Несмотря на трудности, задание было выполнено в срок. 8. Именно там я и встретил Николая. 9. Для этого он я

вызвал нас. 10. Если бы не Сережа, я бы не догадался. 11. При необходимости справься по таблице. 12. Из-за дождя игру пришлось прервать. 13. Володя слишком ленив, чтобы стать отличником. 14. Сразу же по приезде она позвонила Алексею. 15. Его лицо потемнело, как туча. 16. При шторме держите дверь рубки запертой. 17. Тропа извивалась, как змея. 18. Мяч пролетел мимо ворот, хоть и близко к штанге. 19. Именно так и должен был поступить честный человек. 20. Помня наш уговор, я не стал возражать ему.

DETACHED PARTS OF THE SENTENCE

Exercise 1. Point out the detached parts of the sentence. State what they are expressed by. Consider their role in the sentence. Translate into Russian.

1. The pilot, exhausted but happy, was getting out of the cockpit. 2. Perhaps I don't quite catch your meaning, Roddy. 3. Mr Carruthers, the chief consulting architect, spoke very definitely against the suggested scheme of construction. 4. Oh, how I wish we had never touched upon that delicate question! 5. Miss Clarkson will no doubt make the most efficient secretary one can desire. 6. Immediately on arrival from the airport the chief called up a conference of his aides and advisers. 7. Sorry, but your account of the procedure wants some two or three essential points. 8. Well, we may call it a day, mayn't we? 9. Very erect, very imposing in his ceremonial tail-coat and ruff, the butler was showing the guests into the grand hall. 10. See, the fog is lifting; we might still hope for a country ride, after all. 11. For the rest, things are going on as usual. 12. The facts are presented clear enough, but the style, I believe, needs some polishing. 13. Half a dozen tanks, emerging from nowhere, were taking positions outside the village. 14. Can I see Mr J.O. Watkins, please?

Exercise 2. Choose parenthetical phrases from the list below to expand the following sentences. Give various versions of expansion with each sentence.

to my mind, for all I know, as far as Mr Blake is concerned, unfortunately, luckily, fortunately, to say nothing of the rest, moreover, by the way, in all probability, certainly, evidently, at

all events, in any case, to be sure, for sure, with your permission, naturally, however, between ourselves

1. This is all very simple. 2. She'll be speaking of her pet dog, and how she admires its cleverness. 3. We'll have time to arrange matters tomorrow. 4. The storm has ceased. 5. But the time of departure has been changed. 6. There will be complications. 7. To know everything is to know nothing. 8. Take it or leave it. 9. I'd prefer an ice. 10. Mike will agree. 11. The monument is too massive. 12. The plane is still climbing. 13. The trees will be turning yellow. 14. I haven't been listening. 15. This film is still showing. 16. They are not ready yet. 17. The plot is a failure. 18. In an hour the satellite will be in orbit. 19. Azaleas are just the flowers. 20. By the time the work will long have been over. 21. The light is dazzling.

Exercise 3. Translate into English paying attention to different types of detached parts of the sentence.

1. Бросив пальто на спинку дивана, Иван Ильич поспешил к телефону. 2. Смотрите, огонек движется. 3. Ох, надоели мне ваши жалобы! 4. Человек, подошедший позже всех, оказался директором павильона. 5. Универмаг, по-моему, еще открыт. 6. Я задержусь, но не очень. 7. Повернув за угол, машина резко затормозила. 8. Познакомьтесь: Ольга Никифоровна Прилуцкая, наш новый начальник цеха. 9. Пусть будет немного; во всяком случае, это лучше, чем ничего. 10. По всей вероятности, подъем самолета закончился; да, мы легли на курс. 11. Почему же все-таки наш гость, сам отличный специалист по туризму, не поддержал это предложение? 12. Запыхавшиеся после пробежки дети выстраивались в линейку. 13. С текстом, законченным вчера, предстояла еще кропотливая редакторская работа. 14. Кажется, собирается гроза. 15. С вашего разрешения я откланяюсь. 16. Что касается командировки в Иркутск, то я согласен. 17. ТУ-104, пассажирский самолет, созданный под руководством замечательного авиаконструктора А.Н. Туполева, быстро завоевал мировое признание. 18. Вы тоже видите темную полосу на горизонте? Наверняка это земля. 19. Ну я бы не сказал, что роликовые коньки как вид спорта устарели. 20. Начала строиться линия метро, соединяющая центр с западной окраиной города. 21. Аристотель, великий древнегреческий ученый, по праву признан гением всех времен и народов.

HOMOGENEOUS PARTS OF THE SENTENCE

Exercise 1. Point out the homogeneous parts in the following sentences.
State their structure and function. Translate into Russian.

1. The ascent was long and tiring. 2. The smoke curled up over the chimneys and melted in the morning air. 3. Your objection is interesting, but not convincing. 4. They can, and do get their small supplies from Calcutta. 5. The man looked worldly, and elegant, and confident of himself. 6. Poor Dicky had no word of cheer either from his stepmother, or from his stepsister, or from the nurse. 7. Both the coach and the boys will be delighted to see you in our team again. 8. He felt neither defeated, nor discouraged in any way. 9. Have a sandwich and a cup of tea with jam and biscuit and join us down in the hall. 10. Once or twice the two envoys met on a neutral ground, but neither of them was going to make or willing to accept a suggestion for an early resumption of talks on the disputed matters. 11. He has made a downright blunder and won't admit it. 12. The dancer returned to the stage, made a curtsy, then kissed her hand to the audience and left amid a stormy applause. 13. Her noble, spiritual features expressed content and gratitude. 14. Two oval white clouds, silvery and golden at the edges, floated like twin fairy swans over the crystal blue of the southern sky. 15. The proverbial, infinite, all-embracing erudition of the professor has won him profound estimation not only of his friends and colleagues, but also of his scientific opponents.

Exercise 2. Join each of the following pairs and groups of sentences into one with homogeneous parts. Use the conjunctions *and*, *but*, *or*, *nor*, *then*, as well as the asyndetic type of connection. Give different versions of connection where possible.

1. A quiet walk in the garden before going to bed is useful. It is pleasant. 2. Jim was disappointed. Nellie was disappointed. 3. I spoke to Aunt Polly. I didn't speak to Ned. 4. She didn't write to us. She didn't send us a telegram. 5. The tank was hit by a shell. The tank continued to move forward, firing at the enemy fortifications. 6. The man stopped. The man hesitated. The man turned to the left. 7. Children grow. Children become unruly. Children gradually improve. 8. Granny is in the living room. Granny is in the kitchen. Granny is in the garden. 9. He was not surprised. He was not offended. 10. He won't do it. I won't do it. 11. You could fix the batteries. I could fix the batteries. Even little Hugh could fix the batteries. 12. They were hungry. They were thirsty. They were excited. They were happy. 13. Our vacation was over. It was short. It was joyful. 14. He stood by the window. He was smoking a cigar. He was looking out at the darkening sky. 15. The young man gave us a sudden look. The look was wondering. It was strangely frightened, too. 16. We didn't expect any praise from the teacher. We didn't expect it from our classmates. We didn't expect it from our parents, either.

Exercise 3. Join each of the following pairs of sentences into one with homogeneous parts. Use the discontinuous conjunctions *both ... and*, *either ... or*, *neither ... nor*.

1. Their conversation was pleasant. It was instructing. 2. Children admired the show. Parents admired the show. 3. This hat doesn't fit you. It doesn't become you. 4. My wife is fond of mural painting. I am fond of mural painting. 5. Kenneth will present the progress report. Mabel Stone will present the progress report. 6. I can't speak Chinese. I can't speak Japanese. 7. They are not for our plan of action. They are not against our plan of action. 8. The road was broad. The road was well looked after. 9. He spoke of our victories. He spoke of our needs. He spoke of our plans for the future. 10. The spectators were enraptured with the plot. They were

enraptured with the performance. They were enraptured above all with the unmatched acting of Mrs Craggs playing the main woman's role. 11. I don't want to be sympathized with. I don't want to be encouraged. I don't want even to be praised. All I want is to be left alone. 12. Their room was on the second floor facing the sea. Their room was on the third floor looking into the courtyard.

Exercise 4. Translate into English paying attention to the homogeneous parts of the sentence.

1. Мы не встретили их ни в клубе, ни в парке, ни на набережной. 2. Длинный приплюснутый серый лимузин вынырнул из тоннеля и промчался мимо, обдав нас горячим дыханием мотора и оглушив треском гравия, выбрасываемого колесами. 3. Минуту спустя я поднялась с кресла и подошла к открытому окну, сквозь которое доносился далекий шум прибоя и шелест листвы. 4. И рабочие, и инженеры, и пришедшие студенты-практиканты были одинаково заинтересованы рассказом делегата. Когда он кончил, было уже поздно; вопросы и обмен мнениями решили перенести на следующий день. 5. Продуктовый магазин или за углом, или напротив через площадь. А к большому универсаму вы можете проехать на троллейбусе — две или три остановки. 6. Мы выбрали уютный столик в углу, но до прихода Володи решили ничего не заказывать. 7. Было ни светло, ни темно: короткие летние сумерки между ослепительно ярким днем и непроглядно темной ночью. 8. Кажется, он хорошо знал в чем дело, но почему-то никому ничего не сказал; впрочем, теперь это ни для них, ни для него, ни для нас не имеет никакого значения. 9. Мы пока еще не успели наметить ни программы, ни даты вечера и даже не договорились о помещении. Но не тревожьтесь и не ругайте нас: организаторы и выступающие выделены, и времени впереди достаточно. 10. Миша сделал ошибку в расчете и не хочет признать это. Но нужно исправить ее теперь, а не откладывать до общей сверки. 11. Думайте, выбирайте, решайте: сейчас или никогда! 12. Они закончили деловую беседу и пили кофе на веранде. Их ожидал день отдыха и домашних радостей, а за ним — завершающая неделя напряженной, но интереснейшей работы над проектом подводного экскаватора.

COMPLICATED SENTENCE: BLEND COMPLICATION

Exercise 1. Point out the complex subject and complex object in the following sentences. State their structure. Translate into Russian.

1. We have often heard him whisper something to himself. 2. You can't expect all people to take your words for granted. 3. Do you see the blonde girl walking with a pet dog over there, by the fountain? 4. Has that old grumbler ever been seen to smile? 5. Everyone considered John Spellow just the person to represent the firm. 6. They seem to have learned the news long before we were informed. 7. The fish was served cold. 8. He didn't notice Mary approach them from behind. 9. That able man was soon appointed head of the production department. 10. We'll make him come at ten, then. 11. But who, if not Mr Teryoshin, was supposed to chair the session? 12. You shouldn't let the boy eat so much chocolate. 13. The sight of it rendered me motionless. 14. The Head Waiter got the tables joined together and laid for a twenty-four person banquet. 15. The lightning set the shed on fire.

Exercise 2. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use constructions with a complex subject.

1. It seems so: he has come up here twice in our absence. He seems... 2. It appears: they have taken into account our advice. They appear... 3. It happened so: he broke with the usual convention of his office and spoke before a crowd in the

square. He happened... 4. It is likely: the parade of the marines will be postponed until next Sunday. The parade of the marines is likely... 5. I am sure of it: they will very soon catch up with us. They are sure... 6. It proved so: our fears were ungrounded. Our fears proved... 7. It was certain: the sprinter would win the race. The sprinter was certain... 8. I am sure of it: the designer himself will say his decisive word. The designer is sure... 9. It doesn't seem so: they are not very happy about our visit. They don't seem... 10. It is likely: they have left without notifying me. They are likely... 11. It proved so: the quality of the product met all the requirements. The quality of the product proved... 12. It isn't likely: the paper will be accepted for publication. The paper isn't likely...

Exercise 3. Translate into English paying attention to constructions with a complex subject.

1. Он, по-видимому, был уже информирован о нашем решении. 2. Мне случилось самому слушать этого замечательного лектора. 3. Не волнуйтесь, он наверняка скоро позвонит нам. 4. Полет, по-видимому, будет задержан из-за неблагоприятных погодных условий. 5. Мы наверняка опоздаем на спектакль. 6. Ребенок, как оказалось, заразился корью. 7. Не похоже на то, что конференция будет отложена. 8. Кажется, этот фильм уже демонстрируется. 9. Мне случилось знать его лично. 10. Оказалось, что Дмитрий Федорович является профессиональным шахматистом. 11. Не похоже на то, что Алла хорошо рисует. 12. Мы, по-видимому, скоро достигнем вершины горы.

Exercise 4. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use constructions with a complex infinitive or participial object.

1. We saw it: she crossed the lawn with a bunch of beautiful azaleas in her hand. 2. I watched it: the plane touched down on the central runway. 3. I saw it: the man hesitated before he closed the door. 4. She felt it: the road shook under her feet. 5. They have never seen it: the girl cried. 6. I haven't felt it: she touched my hand suddenly. 7. The children watched it: the balloon burst when it flew over the roof. 8. We watched it holding our breath: the acrobat made a double somerset.

9. They saw it: the speaker took up his notes and made for the platform. 10. He felt it: his heart gave a sudden start. 11. We watched it: the troops were drawing up for the parade. 12. I felt it: someone watched me from a distance. 13. He heard it: she was playing the piano in the next room. 14. We watched it: the stately ship was slowly sailing out of the harbour. 15. I smelt it: something burnt in the oven. 16. I heard it myself: he was saying these words. 17. We watched it: the flag submarine came to the surface.

Exercise 5. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use constructions with a complex subject.

1. She was seen so: she entered the garden through a side gate. 2. The plane was watched: it took off and climbed gracefully and disappeared in the white clouds. 3. The sun was watched: it was sinking into the sea. 4. The telephone was heard: it was buzzing in the next room. 5. He was seen: he produced a key and opened the door. 6. It was felt: their indignation was mounting. 7. It was heard: the taxi was giving repeated signals down in the street. 8. Jimmy was heard so: he shouted something to the people on the bridge. 9. The commotion was felt so: it was quieting down. 10. Clarence was seen so: she rose to her feet with an impatient sigh and left the table. 11. The cat was seen so: it crept noiselessly down the staircase. 12. A riflebolt was heard so: it suddenly clicked in the bushes in front of the climbers.

Exercise 6. Translate into English using constructions with a complex subject and a complex object.

1. Мы наблюдали, как парусная яхта подходила к причалу. 2. Было слышно, как на открытой эстраде играет духовой оркестр. 3. Люди смотрели, как самолеты в небе выполняют фигуры высшего пилотажа. 4. Мы слышали, как она играет сонату Бетховена у себя в комнате наверху. 5. Чувствовалось, что напряжение уменьшается. 6. Я видел, как с сумкой для покупок в руке она пересекала улицу. 7. Было видно, как воинские части разворачивались в долине. 8. Было слышно, как где-то залаяла собака. 9. Наблюдала, как спортивный автомобиль набирает скорость на втором круге. 10. Они наблюдали, как поднимается

флаг на мачте Дворца Молодежи. 11. Я никогда не слышал, чтобы Маша пела этот романс. 12. Мы так хотели услышать, как вы играете на гитаре. 13. Они никогда не видели, чтобы профессор был так возбужден. 14. Видели, как он показывает что-то жестами человеку на другой стороне реки.

Exercise 7. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use constructions with an infinitive complex object. Mind the correct use of the particle to with the infinitive.

1. Don't let the child do it: the child shouldn't play alone in the courtyard. 2. The teacher made it so: his pupils did their exercise again. 3. I helped the woman: she got out of the taxi-cab. 4. The man told the dog: it had to lie down. 5. The consulting specialist persuaded them: they were to reconsider the type of treatment. 6. We found it so: it was very hard to realize. 7. The news made it: I cried out for joy. 8. I have never known it: he was so obstinate! 8. I'd like it: Carrie might shake a cocktail. 9. I didn't mean it: you were not to do this work alone. 10. Her husband helped her: she washed up after dinner. 11. He trusted Robert: Robert acted as chairman during his absence. 12. I won't have you: you shouldn't say a word against that honest man! 13. I understand it: Mr Chancey is the confidential person. 14. She allowed it: we changed the time of the consultation. 15. Don't let her: she shouldn't mock the plans of our literary circle! 16. They considered the idea: it was worthy of attention. 17. They report it: the expedition has collected invaluable materials concerning the natural wealth of Siberia. 18. You'd better let it: they may do as they please. 19. We believed it: he may have gone on a business trip.

Exercise 8. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use constructions with complex objects of various types (present participial, past participial, adjectival, nounal).

1. I want it: the room should be done. 2. They found it so: the windows of the bungalow were wide open. 3. They painted the roof: the roof was bright green. 4. Next morning saw us: we were approaching the sea in an air bus. 5. I'd prefer it: my coffee is white. 6. Betsy shook the carpet: it

was clean. 7. I believe it: the dispute is settled. 8. Do you want to call me that? Am I a liar? 9. I can't picture it: she is acting on the stage. 10. They found it: he was preparing for his morning report. 11. The boy kicked the ball: it was rolling. 12. She dyed her hair: her hair was honey colour. 13. You should keep the wine: it should be cold. 14. They chose him: he was their chief representative. 15. John set the engine: the engine was going. 16. They have elected him: he is the president of the firm. 17. The blow sent him: he was sprawling. 18. We found it: the paintings were not ready for demonstration.

Exercise 9. Paraphrase the following sentences using various constructions with complex objects and complex subjects.

1. You may call it so: it is a sheer chance. 2. They appointed him: he was chairman of the committee. 3. Let's make our talk so: it should be short. 4. The door was painted: it was light brown. 5. We caught the boys: they were shaking apples from the trees. 6. Why did she keep her face so? Why is it averted? 7. The work was reported so: the work was finished. 8. The soldiers were ordered so: they stood to attention. 9. She was believed so by everyone: she was a good dancer. 10. I didn't know it: he had escaped. 11. Keep it so, will you? The kettle is boiling. 12. Why do you believe it? Is the question really unanswerable? 13. The carpet was beaten so: it was clean. 14. A whistle was heard so: it was thrilling in the distance. 15. The car was left so: it was parked in front of the hotel. 16. She danced me so: I was off my feet.

Exercise 10. Translate into English using various constructions with complex objects and complex subjects.

1. Не позволяйте детям играть на тротуаре. 2. Можете считать это удачей. 3. Он был назначен управляющим производственного объединения. 4. Давайте сделаем нашу беседу более деловой. 5. Командир приказал солдатам стоять вольно. 6. Ее волосы были окрашены в цвет темной бронзы. 7. Она была назначена старостой группы. 8. Я предпочитаю, чтобы чай был горячим и крепким. 9. Они почувствовали по запаху, что готовится какая-то пища. 10. Вы позволите мне взять ребенка на

руки? 11. Я не имел в виду, что вся работа должна быть закончена сегодня. 12. Я не потерплю, чтобы ребята ленились. 13. Преподаватель рисования нашел ее очень способной. 14. Почему вы назвали вашего сына таким странным именем? 15. Считают, что этот роман — ее лучшее произведение. 16. Скатерти выстирали добела. 17. Я думал, что он хороший знаток антикварных вещей. 18. Вечер застал их гуляющими в саду. 19. Мне нужно починить часы. 20. Он завел машину.

Exercise 11. Comment on the constructions of the complex object with the anticipatory *it*. Translate into Russian.

1. Doesn't she feel it her duty to help her mother about the household? 2. I had it in my power to introduce changes in the curriculum. 3. We think it very important to review the plan. 4. He made it a rule to read a couple of pages in French before going to bed. 5. I consider it quite an adventure to spend an evening in the House of Actors. 6. They believed it very desirable to clarify the matter before making a final decision. 7. I don't think it worth while to continue our talk. 8. Bad weather made it impossible for the plane to land on the small airfield. 9. I would consider it a mistake not to accept their offer. 10. Do you think it reasonable for the committee to tackle this matter as part of a general discussion? 11. I found it difficult to understand why they had so utterly neglected the suggestion. 12. They thought it better not to invite the couple to their celebration party.

Exercise 12. Paraphrase the following sentences so as to use anticipatory constructions with a complex object.

1. I felt it: it was my duty to interfere in their quarrel at once. 2. They believed it: it was worth while to try again. 3. I have it: it is in my power to check up all the presented facts. 4. I find it: it is absurd to apply to them for help. 5. We call it: it is our good luck to have met you and known you. 6. We had it so: it was arranged for you to have access to all the materials of investigation. 7. The snowstorm made it: it was impossible to continue our ascent. 8. They made it: it was a rule for them to go skating at least twice a week. 9. I call it so: it is fortunate to have learned about their

scheme beforehand. 10. We should like it: it should be kept between ourselves. 11. I thought it: it would be inconvenient to ask her about her intentions. 12. She considered it so: it was a great honour to be sent abroad as a representative of our University. 13. Only his skill made it so: it became possible for the designing team to cope with their task. 14. She didn't consider it so: it was appropriate to remind him of his promise.

Exercise 13. Translate into English using anticipatory constructions with a complex object.

1. Мы взяли себе за правило каждое утро делать пятнадцатиминутную зарядку. 2. Не находите ли вы странным, что он воздержался от выступления на собрании? 3. Я бы счел за честь принять этого ученого у себя дома. 4. Непрерывные дожди сделали невозможным продолжать работу в поле. 5. Я нашел, что это очень приятно — провести вечер в их гостеприимном доме. 6. Он счел неудобным навязывать им свое понимание вопроса. 7. Я считаю необходимым прекратить эти пререкания. 8. Почему вы считаете неприличным задержаться здесь еще на час-другой? 9. Я считаю это большой удачей справиться с таким трудным заданием своими силами. 10. Хороший словарь значительно облегчил перевод текста. 11. Я не думаю, что так уж важно быть выслушанными самим управляющим. 12. Они взяли за правило проводить один день в неделю за городом.

COMPLICATED SENTENCE: PHRASE COMPLICATION

Exercise 1. Point out gerundial and infinitive phrases in the following sentences. State their structure and functions. Translate into Russian.

1. Her manner was a trifle too casual for her friend to appreciate the full meaning of her statement. 2. The teacher was eager for his pupils to understand their task properly. 3. I really can't think of Bobby's being rude to his elders. 4. Why did they insist on Martha's leaving their company? 5. Mother wired for Jackie to meet her at the airport. 6. Is there any purpose in our trying to catch the first morning train? 7. The trouble is his not knowing Dr Blake personally. 8. Don't you think it will be rather a treat our spending a fortnight in the mountains! 9. The arrangement is for Mrs and Mr Stone to go sightseeing to the north-west of the capital. 10. Can you account for the chief making no remark about my having missed the get-together? 11. But for her promptly turning the wheel to the left we should have had an accident. 12. Dr Stanley strongly recommended for your wife to be put on a hungry diet. 13. I shouldn't be surprised at his having thoroughly studied all the particulars of the document without our being aware even of its existence. 14. It's quite necessary their being encouraged now, at the final stage of this long and tiresome projection work. 15. But surely he is far too young and inexperienced for the management to entrust him with this delicate errand! 16. To brush aside their being involved in the scandal is almost impossible.

Exercise 2. Paraphrase each pair of utterances into a construction with a gerundial phrase. Be careful to eliminate the subject of the gerund where necessary.

1. It's a very bad habit. He smokes so much. 2. Won't it be quite natural? They will stay with us. 3. The problem is this: we should catch number seventeen-o-five flight. 4. You may safely rely on this: this slender girl understands her duty. 5. Would you mind it? I've got to leave now. 6. We were annoyed at that: the windows were closed on such a lovely day. 7. He was wrongly accused of that: he treated his guests tactlessly. 8. There is no sense in this: we go over the instructions from the beginning. 9. I was much annoyed at that: they had not been invited in for the tea party. 10. It is not a matter of this: he may like, or he may dislike the job. 11. We are delighted at this: they have agreed with all the points of the contract. 12. Does he know of that? We were not present at the opening session. 13. He left our company under this pretext: he had urgent work to do at home. 14. She was very displeased with that: her brother hadn't kept his promise. 15. He tries to improve his skills. It is encouraging.

Exercise 3. Paraphrase each pair of utterances into a construction with an infinitive phrase. Be careful to eliminate the subject of the infinitive where necessary.

1. Isn't it a miracle? The man has escaped the danger. 2. It's surprising. This young couple has four daughters. 3. I'm sure Harriet's frock is elegant enough. She may wear it at a dancing party. 4. It's time. They should realize their rights. 5. My dream is this: my daughter will become an artist. 6. Our arrangement is this: Gregory is to head the laboratory. 7. Jacob was eager for that: Mary would be with them on the occasion. 8. I have brought the letter for this: you may have a look into it before I post it. 9. It won't do. They shouldn't complain of being ill-treated. 10. She has no reason for that. She shouldn't feel offended. 11. Is it possible? Has he been away from home a whole month? 12. We were not going to take the facts at their face value. It was out of the question. 13. I am so sorry for it. I didn't phone you last night as I had promised. 14. She was shrewd enough. She saw her mistake at once. 15. It isn't easy. One masters one's

profession whatever it is. 16. I was anxious. They might give me that job. 17. The sea was too lovely. They couldn't but admire it. 18. It's useless. One mightn't speak to him.

Exercise 4. Translate into English using gerundial and infinitive phrases. Pay attention to cases where the subject of the gerund or infinitive should be omitted.

1. Все согласились, чтобы он приехал за нами в семь часов вечера. 2. Они полностью одобряют наше участие в этой работе. 3. Пора ему осознать всю неловкость своего положения. 4. Совершенно неправдоподобно, чтобы этот тихий мальчик был нарушителем дисциплины в классе. 5. Кто мог знать, что они так увлекаются греблей? 6. Беда в том, что они еще не готовы к отъезду. 7. У них было несколько предложений, которые они должны были хорошенько обдумать. 8. Я был раздражен тем, что она старалась избежать прямого разговора о деле. 9. Он развил в себе привычку записывать события дня в дневник. 10. Единственный выход из положения состоит в том, чтобы срочно пересмотреть план действий. 11. Вы можете рассчитывать на то, что вечер будет приятным и интересным. 12. Лена жалуется на то, что чувствует себя плохо. 13. Он распорядился, чтобы забронировали места для зарубежных гостей. 14. Она с горечью напомнила Джону о том, что он не поверил ее словам. 15. Я хочу, чтобы вы посмотрели картины этого подающего надежды молодого художника. 16. Прошел слух, что делегация уже приехала. 17. Разве у тебя нет желания, чтобы учитель похвалил тебя за отлично написанное сочинение? 18. Им не годится жаловаться на то, что им уделяют недостаточно внимания. 19. Ему не пристало быть таким упрямым. 20. Имеются проблемы, которые мы должны срочно решить. 21. Нелегко нам было разговаривать с этим человеком. 22. Увлечение коллекционированием редкостей отвлекало его от выполнения нашей общей работы.

Exercise 5. Distinguish between conjoint and absolute phrases of various types. State their structure and functions in the sentence. Translate into Russian.

1. He shifted from one foot to the other, not knowing what to answer. 2. The man stared at her, his face pale with anxiety.

ety. 3. With gold again rising on the bullion markets, the dollar has had another bad day. 4. Being of a snobbish disposition, Mr Starkey didn't allow himself to notice her pleading glance. 5. He came forward to meet me hands outstretched, a sunny smile lighting up his face. 6. Taking the short cut we could have reached the villa much quicker. 7. He reversed his car into the deserted parking lot and relaxed on his seat with his elbow sticking out of the window. 8. But, the long luncheon over, the business friend would bow and go his way. 9. Once completed, the task seemed an easy one. 10. For a good half-hour Jack sat motionless tattooing with his fingers on the curved handle of the chair and trying to fathom the full meaning of what had occurred between them. 11. She stood before him, her hands on his shoulders, reading his thoughts in his eyes. 12. Having nothing much to do that afternoon, it occurred to me to stroll along and have a cup of tea with my old landlady. 13. Once more the door banged, and a slight, slim-built boy, perhaps fifteen years old, a cigarette hanging from one corner of his mouth, leaned in over the high footway. 14. Not constitutionally interested in amphibious sports, his visit had been one of business rather than pleasure, a client of some importance having asked him down. 15. The director stood in the embrasure of the window, his back to the light, leaning an elbow on the brown cross-blind. 16. It being chilly, we thought it wiser to stay in.

Exercise 6. Join each pair of the following sentences into a construction with a participial phrase, either absolute or conjoint.

1. His thoughts were far away. He didn't notice what was going on around him. 2. He slowed down his car. He turned into a narrow by-street. 3. The boy stood. He was looking intently at the attick window. 4. The guests had arrived. The hostess invited them to the drawing-room. 5. It was late. We decided to spend the night in the village. 6. The storm died down. The boats began to push off one after another. 7. The hunter was watching the deer over the sights. His finger was on the trigger. 8. The deal was concluded. He sighed with relief. 9. The lights were turned off. I groped my way through the passage. 10. He stopped abruptly. He heard his name called out from behind. 11. He left early. The party

was a boring affair, and his report was waiting for him on his writing desk. 12. The morning mist promised a fine summer day. We went mushrooming to the woods across the river.

Exercise 7. Translate into English using constructions with participial phrases, both absolute and conjoint.

1. Поскольку точный адрес Николая был неизвестен, письмо пришлось отправить до востребования. 2. Так как была поздняя осень, дни были темные и короткие. 3. Она прошла мимо, не взглянув на нас. 4. Собака подозрительно следила за вновь пришедшими, а ее хвост быстро двигался из стороны в сторону. 5. С вашим жизненным опытом и знанием человеческой природы вы легко разберетесь в этом человеке. 6. Когда прозвенел звонок, публика стала быстро занимать места в зрительном зале. 7. Так как все вопросы были обсуждены и торговая сделка заключена, заседание было закрыто, и делегации разъехались по своим гостиницам. 8. На перекрестке он резко затормозил, так как неожиданно включился красный свет светофора. 9. Предложение было заманчиво, и он не нашел в себе силы отказаться от него. 10. Так как ночь была теплая и тихая, нам не хотелось уходить из сада. 11. Мы проскочили поворот, так как шофер вел машину на полной скорости. 12. Так как у нее был поэтический склад ума, она быстро выучила наизусть это чудесное стихотворение.

COMPOUND SENTENCE

Exercise 1. Consider the following compound sentences. Comment on their structure and meaning. Distinguish between syndetic and asyndetic connection of their coordinate clauses. Translate into Russian.

1. His idea was to ease the tension, but Mrs Clemence threw him a glance of reproach. 2. Her step was more dancing than walking and, in spite of her black dress, there was nothing but joy in her whole attitude. 3. There's something awfully consoling about you, you make things so simple. 4. There was nothing offensive in her words, but he put his own construction on her change of tone. 5. He had no children or near relations to be spared, so he did not fear publicity. 6. I quite agree with you, the villain ought to be punished, but the cost has got to be reckoned. 7. He ripped open the envelope, and a thick enclosure fell out on the table. 8. Either he had recovered from his panic of the night, or he pretended to have. 9. The blue upholstery won't go with the yellow stair-carpet, nor will it go with the brown woodwork. 10. I offered him my handkerchief and he accepted it with fervent protestations of thanks. 11. A shadow of a grin showed itself on the man's lips, however he remained silent. 12. His remarks were witty, or so they seemed to us. 13. You don't seem to remember anybody's name, it is so irritating sometimes. 14. Either he didn't read the document carefully, or he didn't see the implication of it. 15. There were a few moments of suspense, then he turned round, saw me and came straight over. 16. The dancing pairs paid no attention

to Beatrice sitting with her aunts and uncles, nor did it matter to her. 17. The period secretaire wanted repolishing, and so did the bookstand in the corner. 18. He tapped his forehead significantly, so we changed the topic at once. 19. I didn't go into all the particulars of the case, neither did they want me to. 20. She might have invited us to sit, but she didn't.

Exercise 2. Connect two sentences into a compound one using the conjunctions *and, but, or, so*, or choosing an asyndetic construction. Make the necessary changes in the structure of the sentences.

1. The car stopped at the gate. A young navy officer jumped out of the car and hurried to the porch. 2. I promised her my help. I will leave no stone unturned. 3. Everything must fit in. I am on the wrong track. 4. He broke off. He whirled round upon me again. 5. He repeated his explanation somewhat overemphatically. The explanation seemed to me utterly irrelevant. 6. Let's hurry up. We shall be late for the plane. 7. He brought out the last words provocatively. We were not impressed. 8. I am seeking the truth. My finds lead me every time in this direction. 9. A man's life may hang on our efforts. It is not the time to make difficulties. 10. Evidently he didn't get my message. He would have come round. 11. Shall I read the letter? Will you read the letter? 12. I've quite forgotten how she looks. I wouldn't have known her in the crowd.

Exercise 3. Connect two sentences into a compound one using the conjunctions *nor, neither, either, neither ... nor, either ... or*. Make the necessary changes in the structure of the sentences. Give more than one version of connection where possible.

1. Our hint was lost on her. She was unwilling to take our hint. 2. I have never heard his music. Malory has never heard his music. 3. I didn't speak. The other guests didn't speak. 4. He was very much interested. He pretended to be so. 5. Let's leave it at that. Let's hear the whole story. 6. You will do as you've been asked. You will be punished. 7. We don't go to the dances. Our neighbours don't go to the dances. 8. Linda was not curious. Leo was not curious. 9. I don't have a bank-book. Martha doesn't have a bank-book. 10. I have never seen her flustered that much. No one else has seen her

flustered that much. 11. He will take upon himself all the responsibility for the treatment. We shall try to find another doctor. 12. Let us not discuss such banalities. I'll finish our interview.

Exercise 4. Consider the following compound sentences with identical subjects in both clauses. Decide whether the repetition of the subject is justified or not. If not delete the subject of the second clause or otherwise change its structure.

1. He was coming to see me at Briars, and he was bringing a letter from Thomson. 2. Mrs Tarry saw that she made a mistake, but Mrs Tarry wasn't willing to admit it. 3. His eyes were shifty, and they were seldom meeting a glance squarely. 4. I turned the handle and I opened the door. 5. They sat and they were talking with one another with animation. 6. The cat lay on her lap and it was purring. 7. Soon he fell asleep and he dreamt of his native land. 8. My teacher was stern to me, but he taught me to distinguish between the appearance and nature of things. 9. Our talk was short, but it was very useful for me. 10. I can do the work myself, but with your help I shall do it better. 11. He switched off the TV and he left the room. 12. You knew it, and you didn't say! 13. You won't do it, or you will be sorry for it. 14. Mary is at home, or she is in the library.

Exercise 5. Consider the following compound sentences. Decide which of them are good as they are, and which of them want to be changed into constructions with an absolute phrase. Try and do this change.

1. The yacht lay almost still and the greenish water was idly splashing against her sides. 2. Her face went pale and freckles were suddenly standing out across her nose. 3. The battle was practically won, the enemies were leaving the trenches and retreating in disorder. 4. Harris jumped to his feet, his skimpy moustache was twitching. 5. We set out towards the river, the children were walking ahead. 6. Presently we heard a chink in the outer hall, and Parker appeared in the doorway carrying a tray with a siphon, a decanter of whisky, and two glasses on it. 7. The colonel gave vent to his temper, the officers of the staff stood almost to attention. 8. The snow flickered silvery in the moonlight and the tall pines

stirred their branches in slight gusts of wind. 9. Roy insisted on the urgency of the case and his impatient hand moved aside the would-be reassurances of his colleagues. 10. He felt perfectly master of the situation, his hearty laugh was now and again ringing out over the lowered voices of the guests.

Exercise 6. Translate into English using various forms of compound sentences or related constructions.

1. Дождь прошел, и стало совсем тепло. 2. Над заливом показался самолет, а за ним еще один; они стали снижаться. 3. Рассказ меня не заинтересовал, мои приятели тоже не проявили к нему особого интереса. 4. В этом романе есть много интересных высказываний, но сюжет развит недостаточно. 5. Или вы выключите музыку, или я уйду. 6. Надень кофту, иначе озябнешь. 7. Доводы были дельные, и я решил прислушаться к ним. 8. Она была чем-то напугана, или мне это показалось? 9. Мы не собирались идти на футбольный матч, и они тоже не собирались. 10. Катя не была готова, и такси пришлось отпустить. 11. Одни пошли в лес, а другие на лодочную станцию. 12. Я давно не занимался этим вопросом, следовательно, я был совсем не подготовлен к беседе. 13. Ее губы улыбались, а глаза оставались печальными. 14. Я не был с ними в театре, да и не хотел там быть. 15. Лента порвалась в самой середине сеанса, публика зашумела, кто-то засвистел. 16. Нам нужно попасть туда до двенадцати, иначе мы их не застанем. 17. Мне предложение тоже не понравилось, однако я не высказался так категорично, как они этого хотели.

COMPLEX SENTENCE

Exercise 1. Consider the following complex sentences. Distinguish between subject, predicative, and object subordinate clauses. Comment on their structure and meaning. Point out elliptical clauses. Translate into Russian.

1. What she wanted was a love too proud and independent to exhibit its joy or its pain. 2. Perhaps you can tell me what happened in history after the Tudors. 3. I wish that the mission hadn't fallen to you. 4. One advantage of being a medical practitioner is that you can usually tell when people are lying to you. 5. Work may be just what I want now. 6. That this charming young woman accepted political life with enthusiasm was a real surprise to me. 7. It is not at all clear how they will accept the proposed treatment. 8. I asked her if there was an equally polite acknowledgement on the part of the publishers. 9. We saw that the old man had finished his scotch. 10. How he managed to be so persuasive beats me. 11. It was our impression that things were not quite that bad. 12. The fact is there is growing suspicion of foul play on their part. 13. It annoyed the assistant managing editor that Pete hadn't reported at once. 14. That there were other problems to be weighed sounded like good advice. 15. Has it not occurred to you that there could be a better story for the first news column? 16. It is no business of mine at what time Moira and Jill might come round. 17. How we can get the document is just what we should consider the first thing. 18. It is reported that the overseas checks have already been made. 19. The strange thing is that they are

- disappointed with the new model of the cross-country truck.
 20. Why do you ask me what happened to the manuscript?
 21. What kind of man the new director was nobody knew.
 22. But whether to do it or not is just the question.

Exercise 2. Form a complex sentence with a subject clause out of each pair of questions, choosing the pattern of the first one for a subordinate clause and the pattern of the second one for a principal clause. Give two parallel versions of the construction — respectively, non-anticipatory and anticipatory.

Model: What does he mean? Is it his own business? →
 What he means is his own business. → It is his own business what he means.

1. Why did he say it? Is it beyond my comprehension?
2. What does he suggest? Is it always taken into account?
3. When will they be through with their talk? It is all the same to me, isn't it?
4. What will they decide about the new project? This is important, isn't it?
5. Why have Nell and Snider quarrelled? Does it worry you?
6. Might he still present his paper on Ancient Egyptian culture? Is it out of the question?
7. Has Dad returned from his business trip? Can it be true?
8. Has Gina grown up already? Has it never occurred to you?
9. Whom did he invite to his place? Is it his own business?
10. What did they argue about? It didn't only concern them, did it?
11. Was Milly working on her graduation paper? Did it sound surprising?
12. Might the story be true to fact or might it not be true to fact? Did it trouble anybody?

Exercise 3. Make up complex sentences with predicative clauses out of the following pairs of utterances. Choose conjunctive words from the guiding question, otherwise use *that*, *whether*, *if*, *as if*, *as though*.

Model: 1. What is the condition? Must Mr Hallowsay take part in the conference? → The condition is that Mr Hallowsay should take part in the conference.
 2. How did he look? Was he about to raise an objection? → He looked as if he were about to raise an objection.

1. Where can you find the man? Is this the puzzle?
2. What is the reason of Jim's sulky look? Has he quarrelled with Rosy?
3. Was the house deserted? How did it look?
4. How

long will it take them to finish the calculation? Is this the point? 5. What is the question? Has he formed a definite opinion of this matter? 6. Didn't she consider the young man suitable? Was this the problem? 7. Were they willing to agree? What was your understanding? 8. Is Mary pleased? What is your impression? 9. How did they get that information? Is this the puzzle? 10. Is John guilty? How does it look? 11. Will Pete accept our condition or won't he? What is the problem? 12. Had Milly recovered from her flu? How did she feel? 13. Should your son first finish school? What is your plan? 14. Should we start anew? Is this the best way out? 15. Were they expected at that time? How did it seem?

Exercise 4. Make up complex sentences with object clauses out of the following pairs of utterances.

Model: What did I feel? Could he speak against our proposal? → I felt that he could speak against our proposal.

1. What is she always saying? Should one make friends wherever one gets about? 2. What did I wonder? Why did she pronounce the phrase so significantly? 3. With what doesn't the instruction agree? What were we told about the engine? 4. What are you not quite certain of? Are they eager to be with us or not? 5. What did Edgar feel? Was Helen ready to forgive him? 6. What were the students interested in? How are the damaged old manuscripts restored? 7. What did he wonder? Would she stay or would she go? 8. What did the professor speak of? Is an encounter with a non-earth civilization possible? 9. What are you afraid of? Will you be asked more questions? 10. What do you feel? What do other people feel in this condition? 11. What did they concentrate on? What seemed the central point of the problem? 12. What can't you fancy? Who is responsible?

Exercise 5. Translate into English using complex sentences with subject, predicative and object clauses, as well as with related constructions.

1. Что он имел в виду, осталось невыясненным. 2. То, что его не захотели выслушать, было для него тяжелым ударом. 3. Трудность состояла в том, что нужно было найти

подходящее помещение. 4. Вопрос в том, что сейчас делает Саша. 5. Я чувствовал, что они не против. 6. Что бы они нам ни предложили, все будет внимательно обдумано. 7. Разве так уж важно, кто будет председательствовать? 8. Я чувствовал, что здесь что-то не так. 9. Ему удалось то, что мне не удалось бы ни за что на свете. 10. Похоже, что они хотят согласиться с нами. 11. Беда в том, что вы не хотите меня понять. 12. Я не думаю, что это так уж трудно. 13. Никто не мог представить, как далеко нас может завести этот спор. 14. Вы сможете выбрать, что захотите. 15. Это было как раз то, чего им не хватало. 16. Их идея состояла в том, чтобы изменить порядок заседания. 17. Почему они медлят с ответом, неясно. 18. Какой метод лучше избрать, выяснится на первом этапе работы. 19. Мне никогда не приходило в голову, что Майя может быть жестокой. 20. Похоже, что нас не ожидали так рано. 21. Странно, что она не предупредила нас о своем отъезде заранее.

Exercise 6. Consider the following complex sentences with attributive clauses. Distinguish between attributive clauses proper and appositive clauses. Comment on their structure and meaning. Point out elliptical clauses. Translate into Russian.

1. Will you show me the new books you've bought? 2. The flat they lived in was not very imposing, but it was quiet and well located. 3. There is no reason why you couldn't come round together with the others. 4. The photo showed a face that was pretty commonplace. 5. Fascinated we watched the sunset whose molten gold was slowly spreading over the silent sea. 6. I who am speaking to you have been deceived by her wordly manners. 7. She held the pencil that was freshly sharpened and ready to go. 8. And you have assumed this from a mere fact that I called up Mr Connolly? 9. His was such a face as would give you creeps if you chanced to meet it in a lonely place. 10. Cedric had a peculiar way of giving an appraising look at people, which annoyed me immensely. 11. I was introduced to Mr Wren whom I found clever and sympathetic. 12. The strain under which she was labouring showed itself in the red patches on her cheeks. 13. They called us up the day they arrived.

14. He who needs help will be wise to find him who can give it. 15. That was the hotel where they accommodated the coming participants of the congress. 16. Then the phone clicked, and I heard the same voice as struck me as familiar last night. 17. Professional people protested in a march against the austerity program which the conservative government was pursuing. 18. We who are perfect outsiders should have been duly warned about the idiosyncrasies of the old man. 19. I placed an order for the monograph to which the professor was referring in his yesterday's lecture. 20. The day when I met Linda as you see her on this picture will never fade from my memory. 21. The events depicted in the novel strongly appeal to the reader.

Exercise 7. Form complex sentences with attributive and appositive clauses out of the following pairs of sentences and single compound sentences. Delete the relative connector where possible.

Model: 1. The man called in the morning. You had told me about the man. → The man (whom) you told me about called in the morning. 2. You ask me the same kind of question. Your brother asks me the same kind of question. → You ask me the same kind of question as your brother does.

1. We entered a small room. The room looked out on the back garden. 2. Jane turned to Nellie. Nellie sat upright in her chair by the window. 3. I wish there was something. One could do something to help us. 4. I want a cup of coffee. This is all I want. 5. The reason is quite clear. He has rejected our invitation for the reason. 6. She avoided looking me in the face, and that was a bit odd. 7. The trees were bare of leaves. The trees looked lonely. 8. We saw a small house behind the fence. All the windows of the house were wide open. 9. She was singing such a song. We have never heard the song before. 10. We were using every argument. We knew every argument. 11. Mike pronounced the same phrase. The phrase had shocked me in the street. 12. The scientist was awarded the Nobel Prize. The scientist's works are highly appreciated. 13. The storm has been raging all night. It is unusual at this time of the year. 14. They are making the same suggestion. They put

forward the same suggestion at the previous meeting. 15. We found a nice lawn. We could pitch a tent on the nice lawn. 16. A pretty girl acted as a guide. I don't remember the girl's name. 17. He never makes mistakes. He does nothing. 18. There was a lot in the letter. I couldn't agree with a lot in the letter.

Exercise 8. Translate into English using complex sentences with attributive and appositive clauses, as well as with related constructions.

1. Эту истину мне открыл человек, имя которого я не помню. 2. В ее душе скрываются такие моральные силы, о которых она сама не подозревает. 3. То, что мальчик не сумел ответить на мой вопрос, меня озадачило. 4. Это был тот же самый человек, которого я встретил накануне. 5. Вот книга, название которой известно всякому школьнику. 6. Новость, которую вы принесли нам, просто чудесная. 7. Я приглашаю вас посмотреть пьесу, о которой теперь много говорят. 8. Не вижу причины, почему бы нам не провести выходной день в парке. 9. Это была такая проблема, которая возбуждала много споров. 10. На приеме меня познакомили с г-ном Скворцовым, который оказался очень веселым и разговорчивым человеком. 11. Лишь тот никогда не ошибается, кто ничего не делает. 12. День, когда она получила диплом преподавателя, запомнился ей на всю жизнь. 13. Мы пролетали над горами, вершины которых были покрыты снегом. 14. Среди рукописей, хранящихся в нашей библиотеке, имеются такие, которые датируются одиннадцатым веком. 15. Причина его молчания была всем понятна. 16. Вот город, каждая улица которого может рассказать о волнующих исторических событиях. 17. Все, что нам нужно, это место, где бы мы могли отдохнуть. 18. В этом предложении есть кое-что достойное внимания. 19. Когда бы он ни выступал, а это случалось довольно часто, он завоевывал симпатии слушателей. 20. Он вошел в зал через боковую дверь, которая с шумом захлопнулась за ним. 21. Вы должны считаться также и с мнениями, которые совершенно не совпадают с вашими. 22. Вдоль забора росли березы, листья которых начали опадать.

23. Есть еще многое, о чем ты ничего не знаешь. 24. К ногам балерины, которая танцевала лучше всех, дождем посыпались цветы.

Exercise 9. Consider the following complex sentences. Distinguish between different kinds of adverbial clauses. State their semantic type, point out their structure and the contextual meaning in the sentence. Note the equivalent compressed constructions. Translate into Russian.

1. If you continue in this way you will break your mother's heart! 2. Since the newspapers were covering the search closely, there was no point in his reserve. 3. There was a moment of strain, it seemed as though neither of them knew what to say next. 4. He said George was too nice a kid to make a good cop, even if he had brains. 5. Lady Castlewood was as much cast down by this news as Miss Beatrix was indignant at it. 6. The stewardess hurried along the aisle to where the sick passenger lay moaning with eyes closed. 7. As he ticked off points on his fingers my elation quickly subsided. 8. The door gave a little but came back as though somebody was holding it against me. 9. When she was through she hung the phone back on a hook. 10. I'm doing it as I was told, so you may as well spare your sarcasm. 11. As her lips smiled, her eyes didn't lose their tragic expression. 12. I was just curious, though it wasn't any of my business. 13. If it hadn't been for his courage and resource, we'd have crashed. 14. You are meant to describe the situation as you understand it. 15. She manages such things far better than you manage them. 16. While explaining the rule he tried to make it simpler. 17. He looked a little sad, as if he had been waiting a long time and was getting discouraged. 18. No sooner had she seen me approaching from the landing than she slammed the door in my face. 19. Now that the reader knows the essential events as they were open to the public, I want to give him some explanations. 20. I have told you my story that you may judge me for what I am, not for what they want to take me. 21. Keep on taking the readings of the instrument unless instructed otherwise. 22. I am sure he was warned about the unwanted visitor, because he left the house by the back stairs. 23. His hand pressed stronger so that mine gave way.

|

Exercise 10. Make up sentences with adverbial clauses of various types out of the following pairs of utterances. Give parallel versions of related constructions where possible.

1. Were the data obtained during the investigation somewhat dubious? Did we have to check them up? 2. How is the author treating the subject? You have never fancied it, have you? 3. Why can't they approve of her behaviour? Does she deliberately turn her back on reality? 4. When did they part? Was the tower clock striking midnight? 5. He isn't going to change his attitude, is he? If not, we shan't be able to include him into the working team, shall we? 6. Where did Tom guide the lady to? Was a two-seater standing there? 7. Was he rather an unbalanced young man? Did we decide to take him with us in spite of this? 8. Was she seeing a film? Did she feel like that? 9. Was life in St Mary Mead not quite so sheltered? Did outside people believe it so sheltered? 10. Mr Strete took the night train, didn't he? Could he have a good night's rest? 11. Did Gina ask her daughter what the matter was? Was there an expression of fear in her daughter's eyes? 12. Is there a great improvement in the patient's condition? Should we give up hope? 13. Her brother was not an easy man to deceive, was he? He did believe them in spite of this, didn't he? 14. The man wasn't in any real danger, was he? Did he behave like one in danger? 15. Did Betsy and Caroline sit talking on a garden bench? Were the children playing beside the water basin in the meantime? 16. Has nothing of importance arisen? It has been so since he came, has it not?

Exercise 11. Translate into English using complex sentences with various types of adverbial clauses and related constructions.

1. Я испекла торт, как написано в поваренной книге. 2. Вылет задерживался из-за неблагоприятного прогноза погоды, поэтому они смогли еще погулять по городу. 3. Они шли, куда их вел проводник. 4. К сожалению, я не сумею быть на премьере, так как сегодня должен выехать в срочную командировку. 5. Мы уже ждали их, когда они прибыли на вокзал. 6. Если ваше любопытство не удовлетворено, можете осмотреть экспонаты еще раз. 7. Хотя эта перспектива заманчива, нужно найти в себе силы отказаться от нее. 8. Я схожу на почту, пока ты собираешь

вещи в дорогу. 9. Как бы он ни просил вас, не торопитесь соглашаться. 10. Я слышу вас так, как будто вы совсем рядом. 11. Если мне не удастся застать Аню в библиотеке, я поеду на стадион один. 12. Куда вы положили этот документ? — Куда вы мне сказали. 13. Почему Люба не осталась на художественную часть? — Потому что у нее защита курсовой работы, ей нужно готовиться. 14. Как он выглядит? — Ну как он и должен выглядеть после серьезной болезни. 15. Хотя это и неприятно, нужно им сказать, что их рукопись нуждается в серьезной доработке. 16. Он так устал, что почти не понимал, о чем его спрашивали. 17. Нам пришлось ехать поездом, так как билетов на самолет больше не было. 18. Даже если он и захочет искупить свою вину, это будет не так-то просто. 19. Вы говорите так, как будто вы верховный судья человеческих поступков. 20. Пусть они отправляются туда, откуда пришли. 21. Вы ошибаетесь, если думаете, что грубостью можно многого добиться. 22. А чем мы займемся, когда придет Петр Антонович? 23. Я задержался, чтобы мы с вами спокойно и не спеша обсудили этот вопрос.

Exercise 12. Comment on the structure and meaning of the following sentences with parenthetical clauses. Translate into Russian.

1. For all I know, she's a stranger here. 2. A guy like that could be a lot more trouble, if you know what I mean. 3. His life was his service, they said. 4. I am not running away from my responsibility, God knows. 5. There wasn't any name signed to the document, they say. 6. What's happened to the telephone line, I wonder. 7. The material can stand a great deal of heat without distortion, I'm sure. 8. As you know, Aristotle was the first to give logic a systematic description. 9. As far as Mr Briggs is concerned, nothing is to be spoken about. 10. What is inevitable, must be accepted, is it not so? 11. This is hardly a convenient time for reasoning, don't you think, Mr Churney? 12. When she was concentrating, Peter noticed, Christine's nose had a charming way of crinkling. 13. You're assuming — aren't you? — that when pressed by circumstances they would immediately cry for help. 14. My father and mother, so I'm told, knew each other twelve years

before they married. 15. The big rough-looking fellow, as it turned out, had an irresistible appeal to children and was, in fact, as meek-hearted as you make them. 16. I daresay charity if improperly effected will do more evil than good, and it will be damaging not only to him that receives but also to him that gives. 17. I am not insisting on anything definite, mind you.

Exercise 13. Translate into English using parenthetical clauses and phrases.

1. Как сказал Марк Твен, часы хороши до тех пор, пока не побывали в руках у часового мастера. 2. Кто вам нужен, я спрашиваю? 3. Боже упаси, я совсем не против того, чтобы Маша занималась музыкой. 4. Он, если можно так выразиться, значительно отклонился от истины. 5. Нельзя сказать, что книга плохая, но она совсем неинтересная, если вы правильно меня понимаете. 6. Сережа, видите ли, просто не умеет вести себя в обществе. 7. Кто же сможет подвергнуть сомнению качество этого аппарата, хотел бы я знать. 8. Пятно на вашем пуловере, как это ни прискорбно, не сходит. 9. Мистер Пиквик, как мы хорошо знаем, — это Дон Кихот в иное время и в другой стране. 10. Должен сказать, я не понимаю существа современных танцев. 11. Вы, как я понимаю, являетесь старшим лаборантом? 12. Будьте любезны, отойдите в сторону. 13. Мне, видите ли, все равно. 14. Китти — я упоминал об этом выше — не любила давать объяснений своим поступкам. 15. Судью звали, если вы помните, Федор Петрович Емельянов. 16. Они, к нашему удивлению, отказались от поездки на море. 17. Нравится ему или не нравится, а работу нужно довести до конца. 18. Когда же они придут, хотел бы я знать!

Exercise 14. Consider the structure and meaning of the following emphatic complex sentences. Translate into Russian.

1. It was in the kitchen passage where the fuse box was located. 2. It was during his absence from the Great Hall that the door bell was heard. 3. It was at the piano that Stephen was sitting. 4. It was Gina who described the scene between Lewis and Edgar. 5. It was at Roy that the other

boys laughed. 6. It was the signs of rising excitement that he noted. 7. It was in a mist of rage that Edgar walked about the garden. 8. It was on the patient's having his breakfast in bed that the doctor insisted. 9. It was about Mr Brand that they found something discreditable. 10. It was Louise who came down the main stairway. 11. It is me who can't imagine you married. 12. It was him that she looked at incredibly. 13. It was about four o'clock that the one really disturbing incident of the day happened.

Exercise 15. Translate into English the following sentences using the corresponding emphatic constructions.

1. Именно он может помочь нам в этом деле. 2. Именно вчера я говорил с директором о возможности поставить эксперимент. 3. Приехать к тете на каникулы — вот чего хотела Джина. 4. Совершенно спокойно — вот как прошел следующий день. 5. Поездом — вот как они поехали в Новосибирск. 6. Именно вы мне и нужны. 7. Именно за, а не против выступила Лена в этой дискуссии. 8. Новое платье — вот что вам нужно сделать к встрече Нового года. 9. Много лет назад — вот когда эта семья приехала в Москву. 10. Именно о здоровье Кэрри так волновался мистер Джексон. 11. Необыкновенно умным и добрым — вот каким был этот человек. 12. Именно так, как вы мне сказали, я и поступил.

Contents

Предисловие	3
MORPHOLOGY	5
NOUN	5
Classification of Nouns	5
Number	7
Case	11
Article	15
ADJECTIVE	33
NUMERAL	40
PRONOUN	42
ADVERB	56
VERB	60
Tense	60
Voice	74
Mood	77
Modal Verbs	90
Verbals	107
Infinitive	107
Syntactical Complexes with the Infinitive	118
Gerund	123
Participle I	135
Participle II	143

SYNTAX	148
PRELIMINARIES	148
SIMPLE SENTENCE: UNEXPANDED	
AND EXPANDED SENTENCES	153
Elliptical and One-Member Sentences	156
Word Order	160
COMMUNICATIVE TYPES OF SENTENCES	166
PARTS OF THE SENTENCE	177
Subject	177
Predicate	182
Object	190
Attribute. Apposition	195
Adverbial Modifier	200
DETACHED PARTS OF THE SENTENCE	206
HOMOGENEOUS PARTS OF THE SENTENCE	208
COMPLICATED SENTENCE: BLEND	
COMPLICATION	211
COMPLICATED SENTENCE: PHRASE	
COMPLICATION	218
COMPOUND SENTENCE	223
COMPLEX SENTENCE	227

Учебное издание

**Блох Марк Яковлевич
Лебедева Анастасия Яковлевна
Денисова Валентина Серафимовна**

ПРАКТИКУМ ПО АНГЛИЙСКОМУ ЯЗЫКУ:

Грамматика. Сборник упражнений

Учебное пособие для вузов

**Ведущий редактор Л.И. Кравцова
Художественный редактор О.Н. Адашкина
Корректор З.Ф. Юрескул
Технический редактор Е.Д. Захарова
Компьютерная верстка С.А. Соколова**

**ООО «Издательство Астрель»
129085, г. Москва, проезд Ольминского, 3а**

**ООО «Издательство АСТ»
667000, Республика Тыва,
г. Кызыл, ул. Кочетова, 28**

**Наши электронные адреса: www.ast.ru
E-mail: astpub@aha.ru**

**При участии ООО «Харвест».
Лицензия № 02330/0056935 от 30.04.04.
РБ, 220013, Минск, ул. Кульман,
д. 1, корп. 3, эт. 4, к. 42.**

**Открытое акционерное общество
«Полиграфкомбинат им. Я. Коласа».
220600, Минск, ул. Красная, 23.**



English Language Practice

М. Я. Блох, А. Я. Лебедева,
В. С. Денисова

Практикум по английскому языку: Грамматика. Сборник упражнений

Предлагаемое пособие включает материалы по всем основным аспектам английской грамматики и содержит:

- более 500 упражнений по морфологии и синтаксису;
- множество разнообразных конструкций живой разговорной речи.

Пособие поможет вам овладеть навыками устной и письменной речи современного английского языка.

Сборник предназначен для студентов языковых вузов, а также может быть рекомендован самому широкому кругу лиц, изучающих английский язык.

ISBN 5-17-000092-8



9 785170 000920



«АСТРЕЛЬ»